

A high-contrast, black and white silhouette of a person's head in profile, facing right. The silhouette is set against a light, textured background. The lighting is dramatic, with the person's face and neck in deep shadow, while the background is a bright, slightly grainy white. The overall mood is contemplative and artistic.

LUST OF DARK AND LIGHT

This is a work of creative fiction. Some parts have been fictionalized in varying degrees for various purposes.

Copyright © Dustin Graham, 2022

All rights reserved. No part of this book may be reproduced in any form by any electronic or mechanical means, including information storage and retrieval systems, without permission in writing from the publisher, except by a reviewer who may quote brief passages in a review.

Dustin Graham

If there is any website, write here the name of the website.

Description:

An inevitable battle and romance that will put readers in deep interest. *Lust of dark* is the book from Author Dustin Graham. hot new addition to the collection of vampire romance books for adults. A story told in perspective of two characters overtaken by the lust of not only blood but beyond taboo desires. This vampire romance book will keep you engaged till the very end. So dive into this paranormal vampire romance book from the new comer in erotica story tellers, Dustin Graham.

Contents

Chapter 1.....	6
Chapter 2.....	7
Chapter 3.....	13
Chapter 4.....	15
Chapter 5.....	21
Chapter 6.....	22
Chapter 7.....	27
Chapter 8.....	31
Chapter 9.....	34
Chapter 10.....	39
Chapter 11.....	43
Chapter 12.....	46
Chapter 13.....	53
Chapter 14.....	57
Chapter 15.....	63
Chapter 16.....	77
Chapter 17.....	84
Chapter 18.....	92
Chapter 19.....	102
Chapter 20.....	108
Chapter 21.....	117
Chapter 22.....	122
Chapter 23.....	129
Chapter 24.....	137
Chapter 25.....	146
Chapter 27.....	154
Chapter 28.....	162
Chapter 29.....	175
Chapter 30.....	179

Chapter 31.....	193
Chapter 32.....	206
Chapter 33.....	217
Chapter 34.....	227
Chapter 35.....	236
Chapter 36.....	251
Chapter 37.....	259
Chapter 26.....	269
Chapter 38.....	281
Chapter 39.....	293
Chapter 40.....	304
Chapter 41.....	316

Chapter 1

Alina

Love, I'm very sorry. I'm sorry, but it was her last request. I wish my father had advised me to "at least give it a try." His voice reflected his worry.

"Papa, please! There must be an alternative. I pleaded from a chair next to his hospital bed. His hands shook in mine, but it wasn't from getting old. My dad was towards the end.

If Sheena had been, "There would have been..." As I mentioned her name, his eyes started tearing up, and my heart ached. He still cared for her.

I was aware that he had given up on life the day before, which was partly why his health kept worsening while receiving the best care possible.

The heart of my mum ceased beating. He was only kept in place by me at the time.

"Papa, but I'm not interested in getting married! None yet! Only twenty-two, I say. Even though I tried to sound imploring, I could hear the terror.

I'm very sorry, sweetheart. I also don't have much time because I don't want to watch you get married. I must be certain that you'll be. My dad said, sadly, "That'll be carefully taken care of, that you'll be protected."

However, Papa, they are VA—

The visiting hours are ended, Ms. Deluca. The nurse interrupted me as she entered the room with a saline bottle and additional medications. He has been. Try to visit him as much as possible; however, keep in mind that he has to rest immediately. She remarked with a smile.

I'll meet you tomorrow and say, "Yes, of course." Until tomorrow, Papa. Even though I was crying, I offered him my biggest grin and kissed him on the forehead before turning to go.

"Love, good night." Be careful.

I left his cabin after saying my goodbyes to everyone I knew. I occasionally waved at the little ones who ran and skipped. As they walked toward the children's ward playroom, I turned to look around me. Some of them I already knew because my father's room was adjacent to the nursery. But today, I was unable to muster a smile. A strong downpour slammed me from head to toe like a bullet when I stepped out into the parking lot.

"Good," I said. It would at least cover up my tears. People shouldn't know about the demons that haunt me or my secrets because it would keep them in the dark. I wouldn't disclose if it meant my demise, even.

In the pouring rain, I stood alone in the parking lot by my car. Aggressively tattooed my flesh. I longed with my heart that a night four years ago could be undone because it had irrevocably altered my life.

Chapter 2

Alina

According to science, human evolution did not occur in a straight line.

For one species to emerge as the sole survivor, several others must become extinct. On this planet, there are people or *Homo sapiens*. For millions of years, humans have evolved from ancient apes. Exactly.

How many people—even scientists—have doubts? Their best chances come from the hominid fossils they've found around the globe.

They employ a variety of factors, including the transition from quadruped to bipedal locomotion, an increase in brain capacity, changes in eating patterns, etc. They do, however, concur on one issue.

That it ultimately took millennia to produce the ideal modern man who has transformed Earth into the world's best habitat.

If that's what you thought, you couldn't be more mistaken.

Not just humans but other animals also made it through the ages-long struggle Mother Nature placed on us. There were more. Deadlier, more powerful, and more lethal creatures are higher in the food chain. He never stopped eating raw meat and blood and relied solely on their innate animalistic instincts, speed, and agility to survive. They had lived in secrecy for centuries, never allowing humans to see them.

They were conscious of their presence until it was the last thing they knew. Because they were the most perfect of them all, they hoped to spy on us and avoid being seen by us, exactly like a predator. The vampires were they. How did I learn this information? How did I even realize that there are vampires? How did I discover their past? No, it wasn't because they made themselves known to the public or because scientists discovered them. My father was employed by them, which is why. Since I was engaged to a vampire, I should know. I was going to Bride of Erick Stayton.

He was the heir to Stayton Incorporated, a business with blood banks located around the United States focused on marketing blood from donors. It was a nonprofit organization working to make the world a better place. And eager to assist those in need. Only 10% of the blood they collected was donated to charity, so nobody truly understood that it was all a deception.

The remainder was distributed to vampires around Canada. Additionally, they performed a security audit. Service for VIPs and corporate tycoons who required protection. He and his family were incredibly wealthy, arrogant, and strong.

Erick Stayton, my fiancé, was one of the most eligible single men in Canada. Girls would sacrifice their lives to get his attention. He was, nevertheless, too.

Men's fashion and GQ say staying with one person for longer than a week is arrogant. He was a vicious predator who lacked mercy. For me, fairy tales have never included vampires. They have consistently been the Erick was usually at the top of the list of persons I knew to be afraid of.

Few people, including my family, were aware of their secret. At the main Canadian Blood Bank, my father oversaw the branch offices. Before I was born, our families had a tight bond. He was the youngest, Erick.

We have been roughly three years apart since he had a child. Right after I was born, this wedding was planned by his mother and father. I was unsure about the reason, though. What made them select a human female who doesn't care at all about vampires? Why did they not. Why not select someone more appropriate, such as a person of the same race? This wasn't.

It's no secret that I've never been a fan of vampires. Who knows how many lives were lost before the creation of blood banks, which were a relatively recent idea. Everyone anticipated that Erick and I would get along well. They pondered, We expected to grow up adoring each other, yet the reverse happened.

He had a fierce hatred for him. But it wasn't only that he was a vampire. Oh no, it went much beyond. As you can see, I've always tried to stay away from Erick. I was young. He frequently hung around with the bullies and the popular crowd. He was beautiful by nature, like every other predator in the world.

They constantly escape detection. So, avoiding him and avoiding him was only normal.

His field of vision. He was aware of me, and it's only that from the beginning, we just kept our distance. However, as I aged, I started to, He finally began paying attention to me when I started attending events with my parents. By the situation then remained stable. I could take a few sarcastic remarks now and then.

However, it was the day he and his mother came to see my parents. When everything failed, That evening, we were all seated at the dining table. Visiting the kitchen, I tripped over the doorjamb while retrieving an extra dish, crashing to the ground.

But not before I hurt myself by slamming my head on the counter. The My forehead's skin was cut open by the strike, yet the damage wasn't serious. And spill blood. When I looked up, Erick was there, consuming food. I waited till I couldn't lift my eyes.

He cautioned me not to inform our parents, or he would murder me when I came to once again. Being the cowardly little kid I was, I kept it. An unknown. Then, I was eleven. He started coming to feed after that day. Occasionally. He used to tell me, "You're my fiancée. It's your responsibility to feed me." Until I reached the age where I could comprehend the truth, I continued to believe him. This is stupidity.

Considering that he was a young man, I would have still been willing to pardon him. If what happened next hadn't occurred, the vampire would have been unable to suppress his appetite.

Just recently, I turned eighteen. Erick turned twenty-one on this day, and at their residence, there was a gathering.

Although my parents urged me to go, I declined, using the justification that I had an exam the next day. I only

Erick and his crew of brow beaters were people I wanted to avoid. My parents frequently went on business trips, leaving me alone at home. I heard someone kicking at our home's front door early in the morning. I hurried downstairs to look, but I shouldn't have, I realized right away. Erick's attire and hair were a mess, resting against the doorjamb. He was very wasted. He had stopped feeding off me, so I believed he would do so again. Because he had many girlfriends at college, he had been drinking for a time. I was completely mistaken.

I don't recall all that occurred that evening, but it was probably.

Due to PTSD, I do recall waking up the following morning. Bloodied and bruised. My clothing was ripped, and the carpet surrounding me was covered with claw stains. Erick was also undressed at this point. Erick had a blank expression. He was merely there to put some on.

He wrapped me in bandages so that he wouldn't be discovered, and then he ran off, threatening to murder me if I told our parents. But enough was enough for me. In the first place, I never wanted to keep it a secret. I desperately wanted to inform you about everything to my parents. Even if it meant perishing at the hands of a ruthless vampire, I vowed to do it the moment, but he returned, but that never took place.

I had to get over to the hospital right away the next day.

Dad had after suffering from numerous severe wounds, Mom passed away. They engaged in a conflict on their way back home after an accident. On a narrow road, an 18-wheeler truck crashed into their vehicle. Since then, my life has changed significantly. I shut myself off entirely. I remained to myself and steered clear of the company as much as I could. My lack of confidence in individuals is well known. My experience was insignificant in comparison to what Mom experienced, even though she in no way deserved it. It hurt to see how heartbroken Papa was.

After six months in the hospital, he made a full recovery. He was found to have stage 2 leukemia, though. He didn't have much right now.

Expires soon. My mother's passing and the accident had occurred four years prior. Erick had never once paid my Erick's father, who was already dying, a visit. Despite his mother's repeated attempts to prevent it. I also wanted to marry Erick as soon as possible for this reason. as of this month's finish. Since my mother and father had passed away, I would need to be protected from vampires who would be happy to make me their main course. They couldn't have had me yelling at them, after all. They well in a universe where It was as though the barriers I had up over the years were crumbling.

My life was falling apart, and I had no way to stop it. Terminating it.

I jolted out of bed. I didn't realize that someone had been ringing my apartment's doorbell for a long time and that I wasn't there anymore. My mother was under pressure from my father to rescind the wedding. I rubbed the sleep out of my eyes and peered at the nightstand timepiece. Since I had taken a few days off from work, it was nine twenty-seven in the morning. I didn't expect anyone at work. I hastily jumped out of bed and changed into my robe. The satin in lime green. I was dressed in a knee-length nightdress and a slightly longer robe.

Long My lower back was covered in long, dark brown hair curled erratically around my face. I ran my hands through it a few times before heading for the door to look respectable.

"Yes?" Without first checking, I opened the door and questioned. I immediately regretted doing so.

Erick himself was standing on the opposite side of the door.

The person I loathed and dreaded was Stayton. He was still the same in appearance, but He was no longer endowed with the boyish charm he had possessed. It was replaced by a It has chiseled edges and all hard angles. His son was devilishly attractive.

Grey dress pants covered her long legs, big shoulders, and face. Its muscles His arms were straining against his navy shirt's curled sleeves. His ocean-blue eyes gleamed with an unidentified emotion, and a smirk played on his lips. His sandy blond hair was short and nicely styled.

Hello there. He asked, "Remember me?" as I began to look pale. Why are you here, I ask. I questioned while berating myself internally for my stutter. How am I ever going to forget him? Regardless of what he did to me, he had a face that was impossible to forget. Just dropped by to see how my future wife is doing. His arms were crossed across his chest.

Now that you have, you ought to presumably go on. I went a strong blast of wind swept past me just as I was ready to slam the door shut in his face.

Erick was in my living room when I glanced around my flat. Despite its small size, I enjoyed living in my apartment. I displayed from the wall color to the furniture, I did everything myself. Light green and blue were combined in the dining room, with a blue carpet.

White couches, too. A table and two chairs were in front of its counter, and an open kitchen was behind it in the kitchen, which was right adjacent to the living room. Walls that were a the boxes were made of wood and had a soft cream tint. Near the counter and the kitchen's entrance, a twenty-eight-inch LCD TV was mounted on the wall. The couches were in front of a floor-to-ceiling glass wall that provided a beautiful view of the backyard and fountain of the compound. My room had a green grass carpet, many fake plants and flowers, white walls, and a medium size. Thanks to all the decorations, it appeared to be in the middle of nature. Only a bed and a small wardrobe were in the guest room, decorated in crimson and gold. That was all, but my safe refuge was the apartment.

Heaven. It was purchased with the proceeds from selling my parents' home soon after my father was admitted to the hospital a year ago.

"I like how it looks. Did you handle this on your own? Erik enquired. I answered in a firm voice, "Yes. How long do you expect to be here?"

What ought we to do in this circumstance?

We don't need to be that tense, you know, right? We are

He approached me and announced, "I'm getting married in a few weeks." our chests were touching.

"You are correct. We're getting married soon, but aren't we already married? Therefore, it would be better if I could avoid seeing you until it was essential.

"Even though every cell in my body kept screaming me to go as far and as quickly as I could, I didn't step back.

Erick arched an eyebrow and tipped his mouth upward. You've evolved. I admire it, but Alina, you've forgotten that you're not getting married to a commoner. You're being hitched to the vampire prince. Get some coffee and make an effort to look alive.

He had such boldness! Yes, in addition to being one of the most significant.

The king and queen of all vampires in Canada were Erick's parents. Although this elevated him to the position of Vampire Prince, it did not give him the power to direct my actions. I gritted my teeth so firmly that I thought they might crack.

Crack. He has no right to act as though he did nothing four years ago.

I had to remind myself that I would not lose my temper. No, I'm not going down to this abomination.

"Leave my house and go get your own stupid coffee!" After saying this, I stormed into my bedroom and slammed the door in his face.

Chapter 3

Erick

I was in awe as I gaped at the closed door to Alina's bedroom. But what most surprised me was how much she had changed in the previous four years.

She was an infant when she first became timid and terrified to. She expressed her opinions and consistently avoided my friends and me. The fact that we made fun of her, but more out of pride. I wasn't prepared to accept that my destiny had already been decided and that I would have no control over it at the time. The fact that I was the Vampire Prince was another factor.

My pals made sure I never forgot that she was merely mortal. I was taken aback by my parents' enthusiasm for the wedding. They were the ones who first made me aware of how diluting humans are. Being a parent, our bloodline was diluted, which was dangerous for us.

Our bloodline had already been altered through intermarriage, which negatively impacted our survival chances.

However, even though Sheena, Alina's mother, was the greatest historical example of dilution, my mother had always lauded her. Perhaps it was so my parents could regain the trust of the vampires who had decided to live in harmony with humans. My parents were ardent politicians, and most of our race now favors intermarriages without concern for dilution. No one is ever able to uproot.

However, leading a life devoid of unrest was always preferable. I decided to give her some time after taking another glance at the closed door. I could easily smash the door down, but that would be useless. Without even having an opportunity to form, it would simply wreck everything. I sat on a couch in front of a glass wall and sighed.

Make a few important phone calls while taking in the beauty of the surroundings. Churchill extended behind it in all its splendor. It wasn't too long to get to the Eskimo Museum from here. She has located in a lovely area. But working made no difference. With me so near Alina, me

My thoughts kept returning to a night that really shouldn't have happened. I could still recall what had happened at the lowest point in my strength. Like it was yesterday, that day. My "friends" also played a significant role in it. He assisted in giving me a medicine made of a poison that only harmed vampires while also lying to me.

That served as a ruse. The compulsion began to grow as I neared her. When I finally regained consciousness after struggling valiantly too late to stop the temptation in its tracks. She was seriously damaged.

She was bruised because he had been too hard. I was ashamed of myself and couldn't help it. Do not even attempt to look at her. Since then, I haven't been able to face her. That explains why I never did. After all these years, I went to see her. What had I said? Sorry if I wrecked your day. Life? No, words could not express how I had treated her. It took me some time to realize that the idea that she was dating someone else was false.

I became enraged with my "friend" Nile, who fed me so I could be near Alina. Yes, I felt envious, but I wasn't in a relationship. She was always my life partner. She belonged to me

and me alone. And I would ensure that no one could take her for themselves. She was mine and always would be, so I could do with her whatever I wanted. When and where I want, please.

Chapter 4

Alina

When I was in the shower, I took my time and made an effort to be composed.

And praying in vain that Erick would leave before I finished. But when has fate ever been on my side? If I was fortunate, he might know him, I thought he would leave me alone and linger around the home.

He would try to snoop into my life to gather whatever information he may utilize later.

When the time came, I had it against me.

When the water eventually turned ice-cold, and my hands began to prune, I shut it off. I knew I was putting off the inevitable, but a girl's gotta try.

After wrapping a towel over myself, I dressed in blue denim jeans and a baggy green shirt. I stepped out of the restroom and straight into a warm, muscular wall, letting my hair naturally dry down. Why are you in this place? I pushed him away and sternly questioned. Instantly.

You took far too long. I—"

"So, I can't even take a peaceful shower?" you ask. I lost it.

I was concerned for you. He concluded his thought. "So I went to

"Checkup."

The fun part was that he made it sound plausible. I desired to.

I trusted him. It was like a lion thinking about its prey before I ate it whole. I wanted to believe that the guy who injured me suddenly cared about me.

I clung to that concept as I pushed by him and left the living room, hoping he would follow rather than stand back and further intrude on my private. "Stop bothering. It's not like I'll pass away.

On you. "

Even if it was only in a few words, it felt natural to lash out at him and respond in kind. Portions. But a part of me was disappointed inside at my actions. I didn't have the attitude to snarl at people all the time, no matter the situation. I simply wasn't made that way. That

is precisely why I was in the kitchen preparing an omelet and measuring out two cups of water to pour into a coffee pot.

You can call it guilt, but I'd prefer to refer to it as being a gracious host.

Erick

Guilt was unquestionably the cause. After yelling at me, Alina felt bad.

No matter how badly I wanted to put things right between us, I couldn't just walk in and say, "Hey, Alina." Sorry, I messed up.

It has been four years. Let the past go, and let's move on, shall we? Friends? No way! That would sound even more outrageous than what I did. The funny thing was that I never gave anyone an explanation for my behavior. The Vampire Prince didn't have to, but I couldn't help but wish he had.

I could fill her in on every last detail. She gave me a keen glance at that moment as if she could read me. Mind. She appeared a little anxious when she saw me relaxed in the

When she left for the shower, I started to relax. Something

She admitted to me that she wasn't typically up this late. They tried to get rid of me, but I was determined not to allow her out of my sight today, so she must have done it on purpose. I merely wanted to hang out with her for the day. These past two weeks, she has been deeply missed by me.

Four years had passed despite how difficult it was for anyone to grasp. I was informed somehow.

I assured her I would desire her again if I saw her—not just for her. Blood with a hazardous addiction. I had to prevent that from happening. After what I did and what she went through, I'd never do it again. Alina

To me, it was a drug—a very harmful drug.

Even she, I was certain, could not dispute that there was something.

We were drawn to one another like a moth to the flames by something between us. Now that I'm back, I wanted to learn the source of that desire and, more importantly, to get her to acknowledge it for herself.

She walked to the kitchen sink and poured half a cup of water into a coffee pot. The water was left to boil after she placed it on the stove. Then she

I got a drink, gathered my breakfast supplies, and began beating four eggs.

I was getting more ingredients out of the fridge to combine with them. I enjoyed seeing her. Even though I knew she was also preparing breakfast for me, she never acknowledged my presence despite her graceful movements.

Call it hospitality if you must, but she enjoyed practicing it. Things for other people, even those she would prefer to see drowning in holy water or burning in the sun. By the way, both of which all of this is absolute bullshit.

I shut my eyes and allowed her to prepare breakfast in peace.

Her long hair moved in time with Herthel and was continuously in motion.

I wanted to run my fingers through them, pull at the strands, and bring her face close to mine so I could kiss her lips since they were so thick and glossy. To be kissed. Her lengthy lashes created a mask of concentration on her face.

A gentle shade is spread on her cheeks. She often chewed on herself when she was straining too hard to concentrate, so I was curious how she would react if I pulled that lip into my mouth and bit down and sucked on it.

I awoke from my reverie as a phone went off close by. After turning around the counter, Alina went for the tabletop phone. I greeted her and watched as she gave a fleeting smile as she walked past the couches. I didn't recognize the person on the other end, but I could tell he was a man.

Yes, Dad is still ill. I'm not sure if. I am fine, yes. Don't

Don't worry; I won't. Tomorrow? I'll try to do that. OK, OK! I'll go. Oh, I do promise.

Goodbye for now. Her brows furrowed in concentration as she hung up the phone and sighed. Didn't realize you had a boyfriend, I responded stiffly. The thought of her sexual relationship with someone else boiled my blood. Boil. My own was she.

"You are not affected by this."

"The hell with it! You are my beloved! For the love of Hades, we're getting married in a month! He was who? I became irrational and yelled at her. First time in a very long time. I immediately felt bad after seeing what I had done.

Even though she tried to hide it, she could feel the old fear creeping back into her eyes. Glare.

If you don't tell me, which I'm sure you won't, I'll find out regardless.

"I prefer the substitute. I yelled threats

She groaned and squeezed her nose's bridge. "That was my employer, Ryan Paul, and before you question what he is, we're good friends to me.

"How near?" I asked, even though I knew it was inappropriate.

"Oh, Erick, dear God!" Alina lost her cool and raised her arms in the air.

You believe that you can suddenly waltz back into my life and steal.

It's over like I'm yours now! Are you sure I don't remember what you did to me?

Back four years? Erick, no. I won't ever forgive you, and I won't ever forget.

I sincerely appreciate it. You took something from me that I should have given to you, and since only you have free will, you have no authority to direct my actions.

What will you do if I don't tell you how close Ryan and I are?

Huh? Will I die from it? Just go ahead! See if I'm concerned! By that point, she was panting.

She completed. As she strained to inhale air, her chest heaved. She had wild eyes, and her neck and forehead were coated with tiny drops of sweat.

Even with the air conditioning on. I'd never seen her this crazy before.

I'd venture to say she was attractive when I last saw her.

I moaned. I'm sorry, I have no idea why I said it. What

We have the opportunity to alter the future, but what has already occurred cannot be changed. We

The most we can do is at least attempt to be civil because we are getting married soon.

One another. I tried talking sense into her, but all she did was shake her head. She appeared to be on the edge of tears, and I could see it. As she tightly gripped her, her eyes started to tear up.

Please just exit the room. She pleaded before stepping away from me.

I'm not able to accomplish this right now.

But I was unable. I couldn't abandon her in this state once more. Don't I

I don't know what happened, but I moved slowly in the direction of Alina until I was just behind her. She had a powerful aroma, like freshly bloomed wildflowers.

Roses. I could still taste how sweet she had been, making my mouth thirst. I brutally resisted the want to eat because I knew that if I did, things would go wrong again, and we would be finished for good.

After trepidation, I raised my hands and laid them on her shoulders. My body experienced a sudden current that caused my hands to tingle. I shared her trembling. It was an extraordinary yet odd connection. Right, as if I had been looking forward to this for a while. She kept her turn.

She didn't shake my hand off as she walked away from me. I carefully moved her face in my direction, which gave me more self-assurance. Her eyes were sad, but I could see she was about to cry. I extended my hand,

She removed the bags under her eyes with a brush.

She looked at me with emerald green eyes as if we were already together.

We were both hypnotized. My hands cupped her face as I stooped to her level. She slightly elevated her face while also lowering her eyelids. Finally, I reduced the distance between us and lightly kissed her. My body and mind were both filled with heat, and every nerve in my body was on fire. We recoiled at the shock.

Realizing each other when realization dawns.

We both stood apart from one another in disbelief. Alina didn't look me in the eye and appeared enraged. I wasn't even sure what had just happened.

It took place. I left since that was the only thing I could do then. I abandoned her standing there in agony once more. I didn't even look behind me to see whether she had raised her head. I was afraid of seeing the tears that I knew would be coming. Her eyes were free to move. I stepped outside to the aroma of burned food and heartbreak.

Chapter 5

I plunged into the pool's bottom.

I exited the water while cursing, put a towel around my waist, and I started using another one to dry my hair. I am currently at my personal

Alina's apartment was four hours from the beach house on the Hudson Bay shore. I wanted to avoid upsetting her, but in. That's exactly what I did in the end! Oh, dear!

She was not making my situation any simpler either. And why would she? What persuaded her to believe in me? But I had to concentrate on making this work. I had a great friendship with my mother's mother and wanted to follow her final instructions to protect Alina and for my good. Despite what contemporary fiction might make readers believe, vampires don't have partners. Everyone thought so, but we stayed true to the people we chose, and Alina was picked long ago for me. Before, I might not have agreed with that. But now I do.

I once more brushed my hair out of my eyes. I had to chop it.

Short. I didn't like how long it was getting. The swim somewhat reduced the stress. When I was under stress, I would constantly go swimming, but it didn't help me locate.

I had to take the next necessary action. To make things work, I needed to come up with a plan. But my ideas persisted.

Recalling our kiss earlier

Although it was the shortest kiss I've ever experienced, it was also the most meaningful. My entire body felt as though it were on fire. She must have sensed it as well. Before she went all ninja and jumped away, I felt her tremble. Damn! Attention, Erick! OK, so I had to handle the wedding preparations since our wedding was approaching quickly. It would be an intimate ceremony done in true vampire fashion. Vows would be made, but nothing

particularly elaborate. It would happen in front of many spectators, largely vampires. Also, there would be the ties of blood

The blood connection unites two vampires, or a vampire and a human, forever with each other. Having to consume the ceremonial blood that our combined blood will be used once it has been approved.

The offering was accepted as such by the Gods. Another issue was Alina's transformation into a vampire. Alina's preference for becoming human or one of us was unclear. I didn't want to force her into anything since if she remained a human, she would always be vulnerable to harm and age.

Now. She has to be motivated to turn on her own because if she might develop into a highly risky newborn.

I contemplated what to do the following day as I sat on a bench when I suddenly thought of Ryan, her supervisor.

I had to step in because the jerk was taking my girl somewhere. At that point, I started to formulate a plan.

I grinned. This would be quite fascinating.

Chapter 6

Alina

"Al..." "Alina..." "nan."

The throbbing in my head grew worse, and I sighed. Whoever it was

Exactly who is calling? They may have seen that I was asleep. What was that sensation?

Was there a feeling of something wet touching my face?

"Ugh!" Even though my hands were covering them, I closed. Why was the light so intense? I was lost.

"OK, Cinderella, stand up!" Someone yelled close to my ears.

Causing me to open my eyes suddenly. I shut them once more, letting out a groan.

The mouth. It took some time for my eyes to adjust to the intense light in the Room. Once my vision returned, I could see that I had returned to Erick's beach.

Dwelling in the identical blue space. Thankfully, I still had my own this time. I was dressed, and it was still daylight. The same chair that Erick was using close to the
He brought me here two days ago to his bed just like he did last.

"I'm thinking about Fantasia. No, it simply sounds like
Fantasia. Oh, I see. Faintest!"

"What?" I clenched my fists around my head. How come it felt like Erick?

Who on earth was hitting the walls while I screamed? Oh, no, that.

My skull was. "You frequently pass out on me, so I gave you a nickname!" With a sweep of his hand, Erick declared before starting to sip

His flutes for champagne. "I have to admit, and it's quite cool. "Faintest."

Could it please be changed to Erick phobia? I glared at him and walked away.

I removed my hands from my head as the pain began to lessen. "since I can remember.

Keep in mind that you were at blame for both instances! Why the hell do I stink, you ask?
of booze?"

You didn't let me know you weren't feeling well. Therefore it's not my fault.

Erick responded, "I should've known you can't handle all this charm. Also, I sprinkled some
of my champagne on because I didn't have time to fetch any water.

your visage." He smiled innocently while holding up the flute. It simply served to motivate
me.

Anger.

Oh, I'm good with charm, but not from my psycho rapist, please! I flung back the covers and
sat up after turning to put my feet on the floor.

He is facing. "And Erick, what the hell? The water the next time you can't find it a superior
replacement to champagne!"

"What? You want me to force-feed you my socks' aroma?" He stooped. The flute made a
loud smash against the nightstand before approaching me.

"Your Highness, don't be concerned. I'll gladly give that a shot the next time you pass out.

Faintest! What was that once more? Do you believe you can withstand my charm?"

"I-I um..." Oh, dear! Why did I have to stutter at this particular moment?

"Shall we put that to the test?"

I was lying on the bed with Erick on me the next second.

His lips pressed against mine. His hands held my face, and his legs were in among my own.

My arms automatically encircled his neck, and his .He was drawn nearer to my body by me.

I was intoxicated by his kiss and lost in it in no time.

His contact. Much to my chagrin, his lips slipped from mine, but he quickly returned.

Suck on my neck while you kiss down it. I felt a scrape on my skin from his fangs.

I have a touch of joy and a stab of anguish. When I was younger, Another kiss from another night came to mind.

Eric, halt! Please!

What's the purpose of this? What has happened to you?

"No!" I escaped by pushing as hard as I could on his chest.

I sucked in large gusts of breath as my lungs burned from lack of oxygen.

"No. No...." I shook my head to forget the kiss.

But it persisted, coupled with the sensation of emptiness that emerged as Immediately after,

Erick's lips left mine. "Stop! Stop treating me like this!" I bundled up.

I enclose myself in the arm. It was very chilly. Similar to that evening.

Stop battling it! He suddenly erupted, roughhousing my shoulders and I raised my chin to look into his eyes. "For the love of Hades, you are my fiancée!

In fifteen days, we will be wed! Why do you keep attempting to escape it?"

"Since each time I permit you to get close to me, I am reminded of what "You did four years ago, and I feel as though I'm dying of suffocation!"

It surprised me that there was silence after that. Erick took his hands off.

Like he had been burned, he appeared to me. From his bed, he stood up and walked away.

As far as you can be from me. I had trouble reading his face for some reason.

I was genuinely curious about his current state of emotion. Was he suffering? Was he are you happy to witness my suffering? Did he regret that evening? These various feelings,

They continued to grow inside of me until they choked me.

"I-I..." I didn't want to reveal my face to him, so I covered it with my hands.

My sobs. I didn't want to be weak, but every wall I built over the last four years had tumbled.

He simply needed a few days to start to lose it. I was exposed as a result.

Helpless. "I am unable to breathe. I'm afraid I can't.

My body shook as my face was buried in my hands, and I was overcome with the intensity of the tears that tore through me.

"Alina! You must be cool." He sat next to me, and I felt the bed sag. He again placed his hands on my shoulders, but I could not control my reaction.

Prone to excessive breathing, I was having a hard time breathing, and even having him there couldn't make me feel better.

"Alina." Once more, he held my face in his hands. "Observe me, Alina.

Alina!"

Just enough of my vision became clear so I could make out his features.

Breathe deeply, Alina. Right here, I am. I'm not going to let anything to

You. Just take a deep breath."

How he did it is a mystery to me, but every time he talked, I felt myself.

Easy breathing My lungs expanded and shrunk, allowing air to enter.

Freely. My vision became good enough for me to perceive Erick's concern before I

He tipped over onto his chest. He held me in his arms without saying a word and held

I kept whirling till my head stopped. "Emiel," you ask. I exhaled, my voice barely audible.

It has strength. He stopped me as I said the word "no." "You've. Today has been enough for me. Tomorrow, I'll let you know. I swear. Do you Stand?" Added he.

I gave a head nod. Only little vertigo struck me. In addition, I felt.

Alright... As good as one can feel after almost falling off a precipice, You can shower with me there. I'll depart with a few of my clothes.

So, tidy yourself and get dressed while I go fetch dinner."He pulled me into his arms despite my objections and carried me to the car.

There is a roomy en-suite bathroom. He positioned me on the marble table near the sink. He then bought me a fresh outfit before closing the door and leaving.

I hopped off, readjusting my balance after becoming a little unsteady on my feet.

Feet then shut the door. I then removed my alcohol-smelling clothing and changed into Put them in the hamper for laundry. I started the shower and stood below it.

I submerged my body in burning hot water and let it wash away everything I was.

It worries me. I dried myself after the shower and laid my hair to air dry. By itself. I then put on a green t-shirt and black sweatpants. Erick came out of the restroom and grabbed me.

It was the first time I truly appreciated Erick's beach house's beauty.

Was. It was roomy, contemporary, and private.To buy your groceries, you didn't need to make an hour-long drive. Edward Erick

He brought me some chicken steak and couscous with harissa spice for dinner. He

While I ate my dinner, he kept me company but didn't eat.

He then sat next to me on the bed, keeping an eye on me till I went to sleep.

Between us, a lot went unsaid. There was still a.

There are a billion things to organize. That would require me to wait until tomorrow.

If I was going to endure the night, I was certain I would need a good night's sleep.

A day later.

Chapter 7

Alina

He had a royal blue shirt underneath his steel grey suit, making his eyes look bright. He had wonderful blonde hair that was properly styled, and he was quite attractive. His lips had an arched shape.

He grinned slyly, and his eyes glistened with anticipation. He's not

He had been staring at me nonstop ever since I entered the room.

How did he get here, exactly? Is there a problem? A voice broke my trance.

I turned to face the individual and saw that it was the restaurant. Supervisor, Mr. Davis. I should have taken a seat before Ryan arrived, but I didn't. I looked back at Erick and didn't even know it when I came in. We were drawn to one another like the opposing poles of magnets. No, I'm sorry. I said "sorry" and sat in the chair that had just.

Erick happened to be standing right next to me.

We all started working as soon as we were seated. I took a little drink of the wine my hosts had already ordered. It seemed strange drinking on an empty stomach, but my hunger returned as soon as I finished.

I spotted Erick. In addition, I hadn't eaten anything for several hours.

I lasted over two weeks and simply drank coffee to stay alive. Or was it because the owner's daughter was seated next to him and giving him the "come here" look? No, it is not possible.

As we began the introductions, the manager said, "All right, let's get started." All of us were seated. As you may already know, I'm the manager. My name is Nathan Davis. I know. This is Mrs. Trisha Alfano, our owner, and her oldest son, who is also her successor.

"My life is Rainelle Alfano, my daughter.

He indicated the two women, who had the same appearance.

They, without a doubt, were mother and daughter, had blue eyes and black hair."This is Samuel Giovanni, our executive chef." He indicated the lone individual.

He sat next to the man, dressed in his chief's attire. "And last but not least, Mr. Erick Stayton, our new sponsor, simply agreed to support our strategy. As part of his new business endeavor, he's expanding our restaurant to several locations across Canada. Mr. Stayton, it's a joy to have you on board. The sentences that were agreed upon seemed to hold my attention the most during the entire conversation. I fixed my narrowed eyes on him, and he grinned back.

At me, confirming what I had suspected. He intentionally did it! He somehow learned about my itinerary and pulled some shady pranks to get in on it. Once his status as a vampire was considered, it was not all that surprising. He was attempting to elicit a response from me, but I was already resolved.

Give it to him not.

Ryan and another assistant helped me set up the gadgets.

I captured most of the talk on my phone when the manager called in. On a video camera, Ryan brought in and made some important inquiries. Questions. But for the most part, I kept silent and let Ryan handle the rest.

I often spoke while taking notes on my notepad in case my phone's recorder malfunctioned. I could feel Erick's piercing eyes on me the entire time, but I dared not turn to face him.

After a while, a server arrived to take our order, and because I ordered a straightforward Caesar salad and yet another glass of Pinot Noir despite Ryan and Erick's glares because my appetite still hadn't subsided. Then I waiting for our order, I excused myself to take pictures of the restaurant's interior. While entering, Ryan already used his iPhone to take a picture of the outside.

The elderly manager said, "I'll contact someone to help you."

I said "Thank you" and waited for a guide to take me around.

The ideal locations for taking pictures the waiter took me to several locations inside the restaurant that was just stunning. The family part was there. The private portion is divided from the bar section and both.

So as not to invade anyone's privacy creatively. The waiting even with actual plants and recently cut lilies, the area was exquisitely decked.

Various hues The couples section was on We went back to the manager's office, and I needed a couple of items, so I saved them for last. Two to strike a photo op while they dined. I approached the section for couples and requested a couple to take a picture. They gladly complied and exchanged loving smiles with each other as I took a shutter shot. I noticed it as I straightened up from my bowed position.

In my vision, black specks were moving. When I was about to fall forward, a pair of powerful arms caught me and held me still against their chest wall. When I caught the scent of dark chocolate, I immediately recognized the person.

"Give me a break!" I hissed so that only he could hear in a low whisper.

He curtly said, "I will, once you're steady enough." Even after the tension in my body subsided, His arms were still around me like steel bands.

"Erick"

He looked at me and said, "Dinner has been served."

The pair in front of us chuckled as the guy gave his partner a piece of steak. I was on my way to get you. To help me find the office, he let go of his grip on me but gently placed his palm on my lower back. When we walked in, Ryan and Rainelle both turned to face us and the hand he was resting on my back. I experienced an odd sense of contentment when Ryan waved me over as he put all the details for the I cut off communication with him and returned his equipment to the bag he had brought.

I instructed Erick to give him my camera. Ryan benefited from the interaction. He hung on for an extra second, probably trying to stake a claim in front of Erick. I simply lacked the energy to do this at this time.

You don't appear to be doing well. Don't eat that nasty salad, instead, Erick spoke to me in a calm voice. His dependable dark chocolate He leaned forward, much to Rainelle's dismay, and the aroma flooded my nostrils as she tried to talk to him, but he ignored her.

I curtly replied, "I'm OK," and drank more wine.

He gave me a stern look but said nothing. When dinner finally came, I was certainly not feeling well. I was feeling sick to my stomach. The overwhelming aroma of everything on our table did nothing to improve my condition.

Rather, it was giving me headaches. I felt Erick looking at me, but this time, a glare was absent. It seemed more alarming.

I sat and moved my meal about while Ryan did all the speaking.

My dish. Maybe I shouldn't have done this after all. I took one mouthful of my salad with hesitation when I noticed that everyone was looking at me and then got to my feet.

I said, "Excuse me," and hurried to the bathroom. I saw this is close to the section for kids.

I entered, locked the door hard, and threw my full stomach's worth of contents into the toilet. It was worse still because there was nothing else I could puke up from the wine I had just had and the earlier coffee. I struggled to get my guts out for eternity; it stung fairly significantly.

After a bit, I made sure not to double over again and sat down on the ground. I exited the stall after flushing the toilet. I headed over to the sink without giving a damn about destroying my makeup and my face was washed. Attempting to breathe deeply, a new wave of light headedness appears. And covered me. I stumbled and retreated.

I got ready to fall to the earth. Instead, a set of powerful arms. I was dragged into someone's sculpted chest as it was wrapped around me.

Once more, the comforting aroma of bittersweet chocolate engulfed me. Strangely, I noticed a slight relaxation in my body. Even though my head advised me to flee as quickly as possible from this alluring vampire who would soon become my husband, the body lacked the strength to object. I didn't even bother to ask how he entered the women's restroom covertly.

Surprisingly softly, he said, "Can you stand?" as he tightened his hold on me to support me.

My voice had left me, so I shook my head no. Maybe I threw up. I flushed my vocal cords with them.

It's OK. You should now take a nap. I'll look after you, he assured her. I stood with my head on his chest, him soothingly rubbing my back as I his overall Weight. My eyes began to sag, and I nodded as darkness soon engulfed me.

Chapter 8

Alina

I gently opened my eyes when I felt cool hands touch my forehead. My I awoke in a dimly lit room I had never been to before as my eyelids fluttered open. Before a recognizable voice said, "Sorry, did I wake you up?"

When I turned to my right, Erick was seated on a chair beside the bed.

I shook my head only when my throat became too dry and itchy.

I sat up against the headboard, taking in the scene with Erick's assistance. I was in a huge space painted sky blue in the low light. Even though there were no lights, the space was warmly lighted by numerous candles in each corner. I was aware of the brisk sea breeze and because I could hear the sound of the waves smashing on the beach, I assumed we were there.

Near the water. Two sizable windows were open and had drawn curtains to the candle lights occasionally flickered as the wind blew in, but it didn't go out. It was fairly dark outside, perhaps one in the morning, as I could see. The king-sized bed I was in had plush covers, soft pillows, and a mattress. In conclusion, this was not my room.

Where am I? I hoarsely questioned him. He instantly extended a cup to me so I could drink. the well-known. My mouth started to moisten as the aroma of chocolate flooded my nostrils. I hesitate and he removed the still-warm cup while avoiding skin-to-skin contact and noticed the cup had whipped cream and steaming chocolate. Right away, I took the divine flavor almost knocked me out as soon as I took a drink.

Groan. Compared to all the coffee I had been consuming, it felt amazing. You are in my beachfront home. I couldn't take it without being at risk your home. It takes too much time. Since my place is closer, I brought you here. How are you? He inquired, "How are you feeling?" with obvious worry. I hesitantly replied, "I'm alright," and sipped more of my hot cocoa. Chocolate. In actuality, though, I was too exhausted to be around him and on guard. What was I supposed to do while a vampire was nearby? He would only do so whether he was weak.

He would only need to use a little portion of his strength to defeat me. He massaged his eyes in tiredness and moaned. "Look, I'm sorry, but I can't go back in time and undo everything." Therefore, stop appearing so helpless every time I approach you. I won't do that.

Damn it, and I'll devour you alive.

Despite being frustrated, he spoke in a soft tone.

I had to get home. I have an early morning appointment with Papa. And... Weight... Who altered me tomorrow?" I questioned, shocked to see myself in boxers and an oversized t-shirt.

He replied, "I did," in a tone that forbade further discussion. "As for the following day, he can meet your father. I had you examined by a physician. He also advised bed rest. Due to your malnutrition, you are too frail. His voice was bland, but I could tell he thought as his eyes were narrowed toward me.

I got spanked for misbehaving.

"What?" I asked groggily. I didn't require him to lecture me about my health. I suppose I lost my appetite because of him. He handed me a prescription while shaking his head and saying, "Never mind." I asked him with an arched brow. It's not a poison; it's a vitamin tablet. Tomorrow we need to discuss many topics, but for now, you.

He said, "I need to rest," and grinned.

I ingested the medication along with my hot chocolate. I gave him the cup back. I unexpectedly felt at ease in his presence today. When the worst I could have feared was another loss of appetite.

Perhaps I was simply too exhausted right now to feel furious or afraid.

He put me back to sleep after putting out the lights in the room.

Thus, they lit each candle individually, leaving only a few of them blazing, creating.

There was hardly any light in the space.

Why are there candles? You don't have electricity here, do you? I requested help. My eyelids began to thicken. Why the hot chocolate, you ask? Soup would have been my expectation. Though I wasn't moaning. I was confident that I wouldn't the soup has successfully passed my throat.

Oh, there is electricity, but I like candles more. He made a shrug.

Due to your nausea, I cannot give you any solid food tonight, but the doctor advised me to prepare a nutritious breakfast for you the following morning. So, the choice was between blood and hot chocolate. He grinned. He stood at the doorway and inquired, "Are you hungry, though?

No, I replied, "Surprisingly, that hot chocolate took care of it, honestly, as I experienced another closing of my eyes.

Sleep soundly. If you need anything, I'll be just next door. He wished "Alina" good night and carefully closed the door behind him. That was the last sound I heard before being enveloped in darkness for the second time today.

Chapter 9

Alina

My eyes started to burn.

That's what I woke up with in the morning. However, the second was my eyes weren't burning, I realized. I briefly opened my eyes before quickly closing them again. Direct sunlight was shining down on it. Large floor-length windows on the wall opposite to a bed.

The third thought that sprang to mind was the lack of a large window in my bedroom.

Ow!

I sprang out of bed and began scanning the strange room for the source of the voice I had just heard. But all I received was a room. Neither vampires nor other humans were present. I swear I overheard a conversation. Why wasn't anyone here?

I spoke, but it's only in your head.

Then I recalled last night when Ryan had accompanied me to the restaurant, when I had run into Erick when I had passed out in the restroom, and when I had wound up at his beach house. I scowled.

How am I able to hear you? I questioned out loud. I had a raspy voice, so I repeated, clearing my throat. You have water on your nightstand.

It was then visible. I shifted as I removed the covers to pick up the glass. But the glass slipped away because I had overestimated my strength from shaking hands. I screamed and reached out to catch the glass as it was about to fall. I didn't hear it break on the ground, but instead, I heard a hand reached out after the door banged, and a rush of wind caused me to catch the glass just inches from the ground. Over the rim, water sloshed.

The glass leaked onto the wood, but it didn't break. I gasped and looked up to see Erick holding the glass of water in his hand, standing next to the bed. He had on a blue t-shirt, blue jeans, and faded pants. He had previously demonstrated his vampire speed to me.

But every time I see it, the power display astounds me. It made me realize how dissimilar we were.

"Here." The glass was given to me.

I carefully took it from him and drank the entire glass before setting it down on the table.

"Thanks."

Breakfast is prepared. In the wardrobe there, I have some outfits. He indicated the location of the door in the room's right-hand corner.

Which I assumed to be the restroom. Prepare yourself and head downstairs. I squeezed the bridge of my nose as I closed my eyes. "Stop ordering," I started to say, but when I turned to face him, I realized I was talking to myself. I'm not giving instructions; I'm just doing as the doctor has instructed so that you can eat as soon as possible.

"I must know how you're doing this," you said. I moaned as I carefully exited the bed. I wasn't sure how I was even standing after over two days of surviving solely on coffee, but that wasn't the point. I had some work at the office to wrap up before seeing Papa. This brings up the question: Did Erick succeed in persuading Ryan to let him drive me home? I opened the wardrobe per Erick's instructions and discovered a few very pricey designer gowns and underwear with their tags are available.

They were all still on and all my size. I pulled out the simplest one I could find and a pair of plain cotton slacks as I shuddered at how creepy it was and entered the bathroom to take a shower.

In less than ten minutes, I swiftly showered and left the house in a peach-colored sleeveless summer dress with golden butterflies on the hem. I towel-dried my hair before allowing it to air dry. Since I've never been a makeup fan, I didn't even bother.

Anyway,

After going downstairs, I discovered two dishes of meals already served and steaming in the kitchen. My mouth started to water when I smelled fresh bread with butter, eggs, and bacon. In a moment, my stomach began to grumble simultaneously, letting me know just how hungry I was.

"Go ahead," Insisting, Erick placed what appeared to be a glass of mango juice and another much darker liquid on the counter. I'd prefer not to consider that shady beverage in the early morning.

Did you create everything here? I questioned as I took a seat across from him. "Yeah." He appeared to be at a loss for words as he rubbed the back of his head. Nothing else came to mind as a possible solution cook. Is this all right? Never did Erick Stayton fail to surprise me. He was trying his best.

As he had stated. It wasn't like I didn't have to give him credit for that, but I could live without ever seeing my fiancé. Do I put in as much effort, or do I maintain my values a bit longer till he does anything that might permanently change how I feel about him? I couldn't make a decision just yet.

I said, "It's OK," and bit into the scrambled eggs. My lips uttered a moan.

I haven't eaten anything in about two weeks, so that it may have been that or just Erick's cuisine. Whatever the cause, it was excellent!

That's great, right? Erik grinned.

"Hey! Try to make it through two days on a liquid diet. I disconnected myself.

He could, of course. He could live indefinitely on liquid food. As I continued to eat the beautiful ambrosia in front of me, I cleared my throat.

I finished my dish and gulped, "I need to get back," I remarked.

I drank the mango juice all at once. I had to be incredibly hungry. I need to look into Papa.

Erick sat down and looked at me sympathetically. "I've already made a hospital call. He is sound and sleeping. We must speak I said, "OK, let's speak about how you can telepath me all of a sudden."

And how did you get me here past Ryan and everyone else? That section had I've been bothered by it ever since this morning. Since there weren't many people, "I just forced them to." He spoke as though discussing the weather. He sighed and smoothed his hair with his hands through his face. "Vampires can telepathically communicate with persons we've connected with.

I was perplexed and said, "What connection?"

I had blood in my drink, and we had sex. The final phrase caused him to strain his voice.

Do you mean the time you violated me? I amended. My happy mood had passed.

I agree, Alina. He messed up his hair by running his hands through it.

We exchanged bodily fluids and blood during the rape. I can communicate with you telepathically because of this. So why didn't you utilize it earlier today? I queried. I kept getting the uneasy sensation that he wasn't telling me everything. However, I was very certain that I didn't want to know whether his explanation included any more statements like "sharing blood and body." There was one

It's one thing to see your attacker; it's another to talk to him about the crime. We haven't shared a roof for this long, though. I can't argue with that anymore. "Fine." I rubbed my nose's bridge. What did you wish to discuss? "My mother will be here soon," she says, wanting to take you to the wedding. dress purchasing and my day may have just significantly improved.

Chapter 10

Alina

I'm not sure how long I remained there after he had gone. I felt bare. Somehow on my own I went to the kitchen after wiping my cheeks with the backs of my palms. If I simply kissed my nightmare, I must be going insane. What took place to me? It appeared as though I had no control over my feelings. Could it perhaps be purely a physical attraction? No, I was certain that was all it was.

The omelet I was preparing at this point was fully burnt and I removed it off the burner and put it in the trash since it was inedible. I detest I stopped eating even though I was wasting food. I drank the hot water that had after cutting it in half and turning off the heat, I added some instant coffee mix. I drank from it after getting into it. Although it was excessively hot, the pain helped me temporarily forget my unease.

Today's events weren't supposed to occur. However, should I have said? What was I supposed to do now? Everything was so I couldn't even think straight because it was so perplexing. Why was Erick required to return?

Before today, where was he? My mind was filled with so many inquiries.

But I was unable to respond to any of them. Even so, I wasn't sure I wanted the answers. After drinking the scorching hot coffee, I rinsed the cup and left it on.

To dry the counter. Then, to soothe my burned tongue, I pulled some ice cubes out of my freezer. I have long since quit harming myself. Why begin now, when my life was finally taking off? I

I worked as an editor at a reasonably well-known local publication. I was a lone resident of an apartment.

I wasn't that girl who was unable to speak up for fear of losing her life or completely unable to speak up.

Just as I went two steps forward, I couldn't go back three steps.

The presence of Erick did not affect my situation. I wouldn't give up if nothing changed. No, I wouldn't forgo life.

I've made it for myself because I intended to wed a vampire.

I sighed and tried to devise a solution while sitting on my sofa.

Despite my best efforts, I didn't feel like I had the strength to fight any longer. With

I thought my life was ended with Erick's return and my dad's deteriorating health.

Out-of-control spiral

I had to swim faster to reach my hands and use all my legs. A few seconds later, I reached the other end of the pool. I kept going. Changing, I continued to swim more quickly until my fingers touched the other end of the pool. I got out of the water, pushed my blonde hair out of my eyes, and pounded the pool's side wall out of frustration. When the tile cracked, a piece of it came out.

Alina Mrs. Stayton was stunning, just like all the other vampires I've encountered.

She had long golden hair that reached her lower back and was perfectly curled.

She could easily compete with Hollywood stars thanks to her long hair, neat facial features, and hourglass physique. She chose, however, to remain away from the spotlight. She was dressed in a knee-length, sky-blue couture outfit.

Matched it with a silver hat and embellished it with genuine silver threads. Except for their ice-blue eyes, Eric Erick and his mother didn't share many physical similarities. While Erick was all harsh angles and sharp features, she had a milder form. "It's good to see you, Mrs. Stayton. What are you doing?" I said hello formally. She had been a vampire for over three

hundred years, making her a highly potent creature. Contrary to common belief, vampires aren't immortal.

In every possible way. They were too aged and passed away, but it happened slowly. They are referred to as immortals for this reason. The oldest vampire Papa ever encountered was approximately sixteen thousand years old, and from a human perspective, he appeared to be in his fifties. "Aw, shucks! I'll be Kenna, please! I feel elderly with Mrs. Stayton." She remarked, embracing me with a hug. I've been OK, but I know you haven't! See those dark circles beneath your eyes? They—"

Erick interrupted her by clearing his throat to catch his mother's attention.

Yes, sweetie?

Mother, do I need to come? Erick grumbled.

"Yes! Absolutely!" Kenna exclaimed, "It's the best,"

Never had she heard anything so incredible. Fitted clothing is also required for you.

You don't want to go down the aisle wearing big attire, do you? Be a now

Pull out your car if you would be so kind as to do so. Due to some technical issues, my vehicle needed to be serviced in the garage."

After that, Erick didn't object and simply walked out the front door to bring his SUV over.

Alina, you seem to have lost WeightWeight since I last saw you, Kenna remarked and turned to face me to look at me, but she had a grateful but more admiring expression. At the wedding, everyone will be envious of you!"

I wasn't sure if I liked that potential. It changed me somehow. I believe that envious vampires always cause carnage.

I couldn't even find the words; I just said, "Thank you, Kenna." However, how are you doing? She used her warm hands to cup my cheeks. "Are you OK? How is your father doing? I'm all right. I lied so as not to ruin her mood. "Papa... He's still standing right now."

If you want, you can speak with me. I'm available to you." She gave me comfort.

Fortunately, I didn't have to respond to her since Erick.

He arrived at that time, leaving his svelte black SUV parked outside the entrance.

"Let's go on!" Kenna gave a joyful yell and gave a handclap.

In a frenzy. I'm not prepared at all for this. I breathed a sigh of frustration and

Groaned. I didn't care if every vampire within a hundred-mile radius heard me express my displeasure at the moment.

I didn't either, but I assure you that you cannot escape my mother's grasp. Easily.
As we got closer to the car, I kept hearing Erick's voice.

"Stop that," I said. I yelled as I locked eyes with him through the open window.

Stopping what? Kenna gave me a perplexed look as she turned to face me.

"Nothing, just that."

"Mother, I was fooling around. I gave her a wink." Erick interrupted me and grinned. And he gave me a genuine wink to show me he was right!

My mouth opened wide. Then what? Could he think of something lamer?

Lie?

Come on, we have appointments today, kids! "Kenna glared at Erick as she replied solemnly.

I got in the car behind her and sat with Kenna in the back. "Great! I now resemble your driver," Erick sighed and cranked the engine.

Jim sat motionless as his mother chastised him for not behaving gentlemanly. My focus was completely elsewhere because I needed to talk to Erick immediately.

Why did Erick tell his mother they were in touch? Speaking telepathically with me?

He suddenly turned to look at me in the rearview mirror. His eyes gave me an electric signal that something wasn't right.

Either he had lately done something, or his parents didn't. What he did four years ago is a mystery to me. I was going to learn the truth, whether I liked it or not.

Chapter 11

Alina

"What the heck is that?" I inquired, holding the crimson knee-length garment Erick had just handed me in my palm.

"Your bridal gown, of course!" Erick responded immediately,
Off his iPad, he raised his head.

Why the hell not! I yelled, drawing every client's attention and that of the salesperson.

I mouthed, "Sorry," before glaring at Erick.

"There you are, Alina! OH! What a beautiful garment!" Kenna achieved the.

She runs her hands through the fabric. "This will be ideal for the binding ceremony following the wedding! Do you not agree, Erick?" Binding ceremony. Why is it that I dislike how that sounds? You wouldn't, of course. Erick placed the ten-point one while grinning.

The tablet in front of his face, with an 11-inch screen. I still glared at him. What was the point of giving me only a portion of the facts?

"Aw, shucks! I nearly lost sight of why I was here." Kenna sputtered.

"Alina, get moving. I have the ideal outfit for you."

She then took hold of my hand and drew me behind her.

Quickly toward the back counter where numerous dresses were being changed.

However, I was surprised by the clothing. White and gold lace was used.

The gown has long silk sleeves with gold embroidery and a long train. It was a lengthy veil. The decorations were amazing, and they reached my waist. What's more, I received the impression that the dress's golden embroidery was genuine. Threads of gold. Overall, it was stunning and entirely appropriate for a royal wedding. It was my dream wedding dress of mine. I moaned. What a shame I was marrying my nightmare.

I couldn't help but reach out and touch it, saying, "It's wonderful." Before I heard his voice, I could feel him. My chin's hair is back in a ponytail. I got to my feet at the static. "It is."

Erick crouched down and strained to see behind him. Our faces were almost in contact as I had my back on his chest. "He said, "Mother, this is "Grandma's," and he went, leaving me feeling empty. "Not the same one, but I had one manufactured that was nearly identical to hers with a few minor changes. It will, in my opinion, fit her nicely. It also fits her structural needs." Kenna smiled at me.

"Hmmm..." Erick hummed as he moved in the direction of a salesperson. Who raised a court case.

"Do it now. Test it out." As she pushed, Kenna pulled the outfit from the bag. And handing it over to me.

In one of the available rooms, I tried it on. The dress fit, of course. Perfectly. It would take just only a few stitches to complete it.

I was surprised by how well everyone appeared to understand my size. I was becoming a little uneasy about it. I changed into my old clothes and left the trial room to look for the Staytons. Three o'clock in the afternoon, I was

I'm famished.

No, I haven't done it in a while. Of course, I am aware! I'll let her know.

Erick?

I searched the clothing aisles but couldn't find anyone. That it was strange. I'm positive that I overheard Erick's voice.

I noticed the men's trial room in the distance and approached it as softly as I could, Sometimes vampire hearing may be a pain.

I could hear you, Alina, from a mile away. I could hear his frustration before the door slammed shut behind me as I was pulled inside a restroom cubicle. "Why did you listen in on me?" While leaning on the wall, he questioned. He was now dressed in a black dress pantsuit and a charcoal grey shirt.

"Not me. I came in search of Kenna because I was starving. Then I instead approached you after hearing your voice. "I gave a sincere response.

"Although I was the one who approached his voice, it would have been advantageous to listen in if I could have obtained evidence against him.

"Fine. A restaurant is located close by. Let me drive you there.

He attempted to move away from the wall and toward the door, but I stopped him. Why not make the most of it if we are alone? OK, that was incorrect. Now, what? He squinted.

What were you up to?

He was perplexed and inquired, "What did I do?"

How could you know what I was thinking, Erick? Since we entered You used to drink from me before, but not anymore.

Then, I was unable to read my mind. I remarked, "Erick, it's just not adding up."

You even lied to your mother about it.

"Alina, there is nothing to conceal. That was explained to you earlier.

He commanded, "Move out of the way or I'll pick you up and hurl you out."

He tried to dodge me again, but I stopped him. I was fortunate that he had not yet expelled me. It encouraged me that he wouldn't go that far if he genuinely attempted to make amends.

"Erick!" I lost it. What were you up to?

He trapped my head between his hands on the door on either side.

I'm in. He then fixed his focused gaze on me. We shouldn't try to intimidate people, do we? Two people can play this game. I then looked back at him while crossing my arms over my chest. I wasn't sure how long our stare-off lasted, but if he didn't Soon, my eyeballs would protrude from my skull. By now, they had to be crimson because my face was already covered with tears. I made my pupils bigger so I could see better.

I did not blink, though. On the other hand, Erick appeared to be in great shape. When I could not maintain my focus, He finally sighed and blinked. His hands drew nearer to me. I didn't object as he moved to wipe the tears from my cheek.

I opened my eyes and found that his jaw was clenched tightly as he

He yanked my hand away and went a step away. For this, I readied myself.

What was about to happen was due to Erick, the vain, arrogant vampire. The prince was attempting to keep a secret from me. It has to be something significant.

At that point, he turned to face me and stated...

"I donated my blood to you."

Chapter 12

Alina

"Alina? "Alina, speak out."

"Alina!"

"Huh?" Erick's face started to disappear, jolting me back to reality. And Ryan's face popped up in my line of sight.

"What's the issue?"

Ryan sat in one of the chairs in front of my desk and said, "You've been spaced out this whole morning."

"Nothing. I suppose I'm simply stressed "I responded and put my pen down.

I sat down on top of a stack of papers and started to wipe my face with my hands.

The article we worked on in the restaurant was going to go on.

It was on the air today, and I had to write the speech that our Editor-in-Chief will be

Since I was the one who took the notes, I was the one who broadcast. Ryan had; thankfully, they kept all the equipment on my desk yesterday and covered it for me.

When our manager observed my absence, all of that effort would be in vain.If I couldn't finish the speech before the two o'clock news,

The news report goes live.

"I get that. He said, "You look like you've gone through hell."

"You don't know," I stumbled, remembering what happened yesterday.

"What did you do?" I was in awe of his audacity as I stood up.

I've been hesitant from the beginning. At the end, who cares?

Is hot chocolate substituted for soup for an underweight patient? And he was trying so hard.

The following morning, pleasing me was challenging! The Vampire Prince is preparing breakfast for a common mortal, I mean? That ought to have been considered blasphemy in his eyes.

"Look, the doctor even proposed that you be hospitalised because of how poorly you were doing. I had no other choice than to do it."

"So, just put me in the hospital, please!"

Why in the heck do you have such a problem with me giving you my blood to save your own stupid life?

I could not respond at the time, so I simply left the room. I bought a boutique and took a cab home immediately. When I reflect, perhaps it was the response I had been attempting to avoid all along. I didn't desire to watch. He's always been a monster in my mind.

"There you are again, off to Lala land," says Earth to Alina. Ryan, I was about to burst when I pulled off a pretty awkward pout.

I chuckled.

I think I'm very out of it today, so I'm sorry. I turned to face Ryan.

Apologetically He wore a light blue shirt today with the sleeves pushed up to his elbows and steel grey pants. Probably tossed over the back of his chair was his missing jacket. One of the sexiest men in our office was Ryan. And every female would kill for him to show even the slightest interest in them. Unfortunately, Ryan was a workaholic who thought his camera was his first wife, and his office was his second. He inquired, "How's the editing going?" "We have until this afternoon to present our progress to the boss. Can you handle it?"

"It's nearly finished. Only the quotations remain for me to complete." In other sections of the interview, I entirely abandoned Ryan. "I sincerely apologize for leaving you all alone. I appreciate you capturing the remaining portion of the chat."

"No issue. You could have simply informed me that you were unwell. I wouldn't have made you come if I had to." Ryan gave me comfort. I apologize. I believed I could manage it. Perhaps I was sicker than I initially believed." I sighed.

"In the end, you abandoned me to deal with two dull.

Businessmen who never stopped boasting about their eateries and a young woman who was more concerned with her fingernails than the enterprise she would one day oversee." Logan grinned. Who was that person once more? Who brought you home? He claimed to be aware of your address. How come I did it?

Will they ever let you be alone yourself with that person? He might have been a serial murderer.

As far as I knew!"

Crap. If I didn't proceed carefully, this might turn out very poorly. I was aware that vampire compulsion might occasionally be a pain. Without question, Ryan was the target of Erick's usage of it. "Don't stress over it. I know

"To him."

"Really? During dinner that night, you remained silent about it." Ryan thought. However, he was glancing your way fairly frequently. Do you own him?

brother?"

"Well, um,"

"Actually, fiancé."

When he said, I got up but soon found myself sitting down. Once more immobile and confined inside. The back of my chair was being held in place by the annoying vampire!

"What? Fiancé!" Ryan's voice reflected his disappointment.

Even a glimmer of betrayal is detectable. Getting married? "Alina, why didn't you tell me you're pregnant?" Erick was aware of the charge.

"Oh? I had no idea she had to gain your OK before getting engaged."

I gasped when I heard Erick's menacing voice.

"Ry—"

"What's the matter, dude? I'm not even addressing you!" Damn

Ryan, it! Did he wish to pass away?

You shouldn't even be speaking, she said. I turned my head in a Just in time to witness, I heard Erick's voice shift again and turned to face him.

His eyes, which were blue, internally shone. Once more, he was pressing Ryan.

You won't be allowed to comment on the fact that she is engaged to me. Get now leave my fiancé and me alone and get out of here. Oh, and remember to close the door as you leave."

Ryan's lips were closed, and his eyes were dull. He departed from after walking into the room like a zombie, he locked the door after himself. Fortunately, all the

No one was present to see it because the doors of the other cabins were all closed. Look at what Erick did just now. I couldn't decide which emotion was stronger—my rage at Ryan for forcing the issue or my relief that Ryan would stop flirting with me now that he knew. Why the hell not! I yelled at him and attempted to rise, but I couldn't.

My chair was suddenly yanked back, jolting me into a sitting position. Edward Erick

I jerked the chair back and sat on the table before me.

I sat down between his spread legs as I turned to face him.

Then, equally dramatically, he gripped my left hand and pulled out.

He put something on my ring finger after pulling something out of his pocket.

A ring for the wedding! After he took off his hands, I noticed it. I desire a large, bulky, diamond-encrusted engagement ring! It had a slightly worn-out appearance but is still lovely and a unique vintage item. It featured a big diamond in the middle and little diamonds inlaid in vines and flowers on the sides.

"That was my maternal grandmother's," you said. Her family has owned it for many years. I came here to fetch it because Mom told me to give it to you.

He said matter-of-factly, "Get it over with."

How charming, I scoffed. I beg you not to say that you anticipated me to bow before you. He folded his arms across his chest, looking annoyed by the thought.

"Naturally, Your Highness. Why would a powerful, great vampire like Do you want to bow down before me, an old, small human?" I concluded sourly. He leaned closer to me and whispered, "You know, I'm kind of hungry." What if I devour one of your coworkers? Male, Ryan, and

However, I then observed this gorgeous redhead in the adjacent room. Yours. Do you think she'll appreciate the neck if I go lower?" What is wrong with you, I ask? I resisted with all of my might and I got up. The chair slammed into the wall behind me. "How are you speaking?" What is the point of so nonchalantly feeding off of someone? Get a snack if you're really hungry.

Blood sack,

Suddenly, both hands were tied behind my back, and my back was pressed against his solid, chiseled chest.

"Are you becoming a little too feisty?" You dare to try.

to reply to me in speech." He moved his hand from my shoulder back up to my arm. Thank God I refrained from donning the dress with the narrow straps I desired. This morning, put on. I choose to wear a blue dress with a floral motif instead.

The sleeves extended to my elbows and were just over my knees. It aided in hiding.

The shivers I experienced as he stroked my flesh. "Why don't I offer it to you?

Fearsome thing? It's my retribution for yesterday's yelling and "going out on me" statement. They were both decisions I didn't regret making. The worst part was that his voice didn't

sound the least menacing. My neck and other body parts felt like they were being caressed most beautifully.

I was famished for more. He was having fun with this disgusting game, and I found it difficult to resist. "Do it now. Nothing you do will be different from what you have already done." I was pleased that my voice was unshaken. "Hmm..." He pulled my hair from one shoulder and hooked his fingers over the collar of my dress, making me uncontrollably quiver.

I lowered one arm to reveal my shoulder. Maybe, but I don't think I've ever "Tried this. I tightly closed my eyes as his lips touched my shoulder. I was certain that my heart was thumping like a hummingbird's wings.

Erick was aware that I was only acting bravely for the show. His lips felt my neck's veins as they licked a hot, wet line. Through it. The junction of my neck was then abruptly punctured by his fangs. Both shoulders. My mouth gasped as I braced myself for the coming pain.

But what I experienced was not at all painful. Instead, it was enjoyable.

Each time, there was a greater influx of blood to the surface of my skin.

Every time he took a breath, he made me feel things I shouldn't be experiencing. It seemed he was so nice that I groaned and felt my head drop back onto his shoulders. My words got out.

Then came a halt.

I gasped once more as I felt him pull his teeth from my skin.

He sucked the wound close with his saliva, and I opened my eyes after blinking. Minor wounds could be healed by vampire saliva. I was aware of this since I had previously seen him perform it several times to bind up my wounds after he had drank from me. Next, he let go of me and moved away.

I turned to face Erick and noticed that he was exhaling heavily.

He had blood on his lower lips, and his eyes were closed. Without thinking, I put my palm to his lips, and the instant my fingers made contact, his eyes sprung wide. His hand reached out to grab me. His iris' blue color continued to glow inexplicably whenever his vampire nature was about to come to the fore. "Complete all of your tasks before lunch. We must leave.

Someplace. At two in the afternoon, I'll come to pick you up." That's when he

In an instant, he was gone, and the door slammed shut behind him. I gave up and sank back into my chair. I experienced dizziness, thirst, and emptiness. It was exactly like when I was a child, and he used to feed off of me. I somehow started looking forward to his visits, especially since, for that brief period.

He was the center of his attention one second, then aloof and frigid the next. But I hadn't seen him since my mother's passing day.

I was there for her funeral. He wasn't always a total jerk, though. There was no doubting our connection when he returned. I had no idea what syndrome this was, but I simply couldn't ignore how empty I felt. Lacking him. It appeared as though my heart was missing something significant. Has he changed, or has it just been me? When I confronted him about what he did yesterday, he did not attempt to resist me. Knowing

He could have easily avoided that, Erick. I was aware that he used the vampire blood was used to treat severe wounds with good intentions. That was the situation, at least. I was told by my mum what.

The diamonds in my ring sparkled due to the light reflecting off them and bringing them to my attention. It was lovely. Erick arrived to deliver it.

It was considerate of him to hand it to me as soon as Kenna did.

I moaned. I was perplexed. Was he acting erratically? Was he acting in such a manner so that I would can I easily get married to him? Was he trying to charm me with his good fortune?

I was extremely lost at this point. What I was aware of was Erick.

I had a tonne of work, and he would be here in two hours to take me somewhere.

To complete. I only hoped it didn't end up being a complete disaster.

Chapter 13

Erick

I chose to wear a jacket, a fresh white shirt, and black dress pants. We had plans to attend the opening of my new blood bank in Moosonee, Ontario, today. The main news conference has already taken place.

This occurred earlier today. Now a tasting ceremony would come after it.

As vampires, our subjects would witness Alina and me together on this day for the first time since the wedding announcement.

In Ontario, we already had blood banks in Ottawa and Toronto. Though it was difficult to provide blood to every vampire in the north,

We opened a second bank for simple supply because it was becoming a concern. It decreased.

Suspicion may also be an option. We no longer had to justify to the government the transfer of tonnes of blood across the state to those two blood banks, particularly when there was no emergency.

There was a knock at my door. Come on in.

Kendrick, the head of my security and my chauffeur for the day,

He entered the room wearing his regular black shirt, black slacks, and black leather jacket.

"Sir, we're ready to go," I said.

"Go ahead then." I took the box that my mother had packed for Alina.

We are ready to go.

And Kendrick, too? He turned around and stared at me through the doorway. Keep an eye on us, particularly Alina. She and I might have to part ways for a while.

Minutes, but make sure you never leave her side. I don't desire further. Other than my family, vampires are approaching her too closely."

Yes, sir. He bowed before advancing past me. He was a person,

He can be perceived as being too weak to defeat a vampire. Anyone who believed that was nothing more than an arrogant fool. He would.

He did not permit anyone to approach Alina again for the remainder of the evening.

I must admit that I wasn't at all excited about this inauguration. Something was going to happen, and I had a nagging suspicion awry. Just this once, I prayed I was mistaken.

Alina

Thanks, Ryan and Alina. The chief editor reviewed our report. "This will work just fine. On the upper left corner of page fifteen, I'll position it. Nice photos you have here. The vista at night looks lovely." I appreciate it, Mr. Browning. He walked away from us, and I grinned cordially. And after that, we left the space.

"Good job, there. You weren't supposed to make it by lunch,"

Ryan remarked. "You seem exhausted."

"Yeah, nothing major, just a little stressed out," Yes, that defense is valid.

Every time you use it, it works like a charm.

Well done, Alina. Using sarcasm will go you far.

I looked up abruptly and about. When asked, "Where on Earth are you," I said something beneath my breath.

"Huh? Who is missing?" Ryan looked after my bewildered glance.

"Nothing. I—"

"Alina!" Erick had threatened to feed Chloe, the redhead next to my cabin, so she came bouncing after her. This hottie is there.

In your cabin, you're holding out for me. Good catch!

"Right." I made an awkward laugh. I wish she had known. "Thank you for informing me.

Here's Chloe. I'll leave right away."

Going where? Ryan queried. "I mistook us for having lunch,"

Together."

Crap. I forgot about that. Ryan, My apologies, but I must leave. I said I'm sorry and came up with a brief justification. "Family is involved, and

I must be there urgently.

"No, it's alright. I comprehend." As he led me, Ryan gave me assurances. The door to my cabin. Now go ahead and enjoy yourself. Due to your merit."

"Thanks." I bid Ryan farewell and went to my cabin. "What Now?"

Mom urged me to send that your way as well. He indicated a box.

While he was sitting in my chair, I had it wrapped in some black wrapping paper on my table. It is a dress for the occasion.

What occasion? My hands were on my hips. "the time on Earth is

Are you going to tell me what is so crucial that I must get up right now and leave my office?"

"When we arrive, you'll learn more, but before then, we'll be Erick remarked, tapping his phone, "I'm stopping by at the hospital." "We're visiting Papa?" A faint smile started to grow on my face as I asked.

Lips.

He was still on his phone when he said, "Yes, now change." "I still can't. This restroom is too small and won't be adequate.

I remarked, "It is appropriate to change in the hospital."

As if it were the most obvious thing in the world, he said, "Then change here." "Lunchtime has come. The area is currently largely desolate.

"What! Richard Tha"

I'll be the one changing you if you keep wasting my time.

I have a good feeling you won't enjoy that." The b*tch! Why did God even create?

Who in the hell made such a horrible jerk?

"I appreciate the compliment. However, if only. He raised an eyebrow as he turned to face me.

"Leave now!" I gave him the finger with my arms crossed over my chest.

I shot out the most repulsive glare I could.

"Fine." He let out a loud groan, but he did succeed in getting his ass.

I stood up and walked out the door. I'll be patient outside. I went and shut the door while groaning in front of it.

I pulled the dress out of the box and stepped outside so no one could see me changing inside.

It was beautiful. I couldn't have hoped for anything less.

When the Vampire Queen was selecting my outfit, it was beautiful. It had an off-the-shoulder neckline, a body-con cut, and was champagne in color. Embracing. However, it didn't appear at all sleazy. All I desired was how it would appear good on me. Keeping an eye on the door, I

removed my earlier outfit. At all times and put the fresh one on right away. It was a fantastic fit.

"Done?" Erick entered at that precise moment.

"Yeah." I stuffed my dress into the box and reached behind my chair to get my purse. "Let's leave."

"Wait!" I was about to leave the room when he grabbed my arm. I peered.

Instead of responding when I asked him a question, he pulled my hair out.

With his fingertips, he smoothed out the cross bun. It's finished now.

I looked at Erick for his peculiar behavior as he smoothed his hair.

His jacket is down. "Let's leave." He extended his hand to me.

I nodded, put my hand in his, and asked him to lead me to God.

He was aware of his plans.

Chapter 14

Alina

You know," said Erick. Your dad will believe I am slowly torturing you to death, which won't be good for him. "You should at least pretend to be joyful."

You might at least pretend to shut up sometimes; I deadpanned. You can truly benefit from it.

"Ha." Erick scowled. You're not amusing,I returned his look.

The driver for Erick, Kendrick, hollered for our attention.We all said, "What?" before turning to continue our glares. Crescendo.We've arrived at the hospital, Kendrick remarked, all of a sudden.He was composed and professional as if he had never before put up with our arguments.

It takes 20 minutes.We only realized we were at the municipal hospital's parking lot at that point.

In a flash, Erick was outside and standing next to me, helping me to open the door. "Come on," said Erick. It's time to perform at our very best.

During your lifetime.

His daughter I am. Why should I put anything up? I complained. Let's

I just hope Papa won't be able to tell. We were walking through the hospital when I put my arm through his.

Since I was familiar with the route by heart, we didn't stop at the reception. Erick smiled and said, "The receptionist sure did stop to have a good look at me." At his conceit, I huffed and rolled my eyes. The Vampire Prince was Erick. His DNA contributed to his good appearance. He had reconciled, but that didn't mean he had to show it off constantly. As we got closer to Papa's door, my legs started to feel unstable.

I was afraid to enter because it had gotten significantly worse over the preceding few weeks. the terror

Every time I opened it, the possibility of what I may discover there snatched my heart in its freezing fingers. I entered this space. If I lost him, I wasn't sure what I would do. My

My father, who was caring and strong, was my hero until the collision. He never returned to the man he was before his mother passed away. As though, he shared a portion of her death that night. It appeared as though he was now given up. I understood how much anguish He was going through, and I didn't want to be the reason he was clinging to life. The chemo was killing him, and the dialysis was excruciatingly painful. I was aware since I had witnessed his suffering, but I didn't want to disappoint him.

At this time, let him go.

Erick remarked, walking beside me, "He's OK. "I'm aware of it. His Strong heartbeats are felt. Through all the noise, you can hear it. As we were passing by the hospital's nursery is the noisiest area.

"Vampire hearing is extremely acute. I only needed to focus on the information I wanted to hear. A small child wearing a lemon yellow outfit ran out of the games area laughing and stopped Erick in his tracks.

Her anxious mother and daughter in heels followed her to the nursery.

Erick and I both paused to gaze as her mother grabbed her by the waist. The toddler squealed with delight as she was thrown into the air and caught. Hey, I had a question about the birth of vampire offspring. He raised an eyebrow as he turned to face Erick.

"Are we eager?" I glared and tried to stamp on it with my heels, but he smirked and moved his foot out of the way. Then he began.

Both humans and vampires are capable of having children. The child will be human if the parent is human.

Because both vampire parents must be present for a vampire to be born, in the

However, because vampires grow so slowly, having children is impossible.

It requires time. I was born almost fifty years after my oldest sister and twenty-three years after my second-eldest sister, and my mother was 337 when she gave birth to me. On the other hand, my mother and father were married in their late 200s.

As he discussed three things, I could do nothing but gape open-mouthed at him. One hundred years as if they were merely a few years in a human's lifetime. Three to four lifetimes passed in that time!

We are present. Before I could finish, Erick rapped on the door. I walked in without hesitation.

Papa shouted, "Erick! "Alina!" as he saw us enter. As I approached, he opened his arms widely.

All of my worries instantly disappeared, and I found myself rushing into his arms and giving him a tight hug. "My little girl! What have you been doing? A week ago? I'm missing you. Papa gently reprimanded me.

I started to cry over it. My dad was acting like himself! He didn't sound as exhausted as he had throughout the previous month. "I apologize, Papa. I was preoccupied with planning the wedding. I went with Kenna. At my dress fitting, we discussed the floral arrangements. Papa, how are you doing?

That's fantastic! Baby, don't worry, I'm OK. He let me go but took

I sat beside the bed and put my hand in his. I'm delighted you're here.

Things are going better now. "No, I wouldn't use the word "better," but it was a beginning. I wasn't sure how to explain to Papa what had happened to me since

Erick re-entered my life. Sometimes it seemed like a rollercoaster ride. Sometimes frightening, sometimes perplexing, and occasionally positive. We still had a ways to go before things between us started to improve.

Richard, son! Come on in. He touched the bed next to me. There was another chair set up. "You haven't paid me a visit either this month," son. What have you been doing?"

Whoa! Stay put! Pause! Rewind!

Papa, did you just state that Erick hasn't been here in a month? He had never before visited Papa, as far as I knew. Wait, what do you mean he hasn't been to see you lately? I told Erick what was on my mind. He appeared to flinch. "He used to come see you when you were in the hospital."

Erick and Dad exchanged "deer in the headlights" expressions. They exchanged glances with each other before returning to me. Will someone please be so kind as to explain to me what the hell is going on? I raised my arms in a sneer at them. Across my chest, folded.

Papa chuckled. "It appears that the secret is out. So there's no point in hiding. It now. "As he approached the chair across from Erick, he touched Erick on the shoulders. To me. He genuinely frequented the house but never entered by the front door.

I was shocked he used it today in part because of this. His customary entrance. It was formerly a window. We would talk for hours while playing cards and talking about basketball.

"Allen, every time I beat you. Don't pass up the opportunity. Edward Erick

For the first time, my smile was sincere. His face became even more crimson as a result. devastatingly attractive

Yes, indeed! Papa chuckled. How am I supposed to forget that? Are you certain?

Don't you possess x-ray vision?

Pretty sure," Erick replied, maintaining his smile.

And you would insist on me drinking your blood with such tenacity!

Papa reprimanded, "I had to tell you every time I didn't want any. That again caught my attention.

"Blood?" When I asked Papa, Erick's smile vanished.

"Yes... Oh! Are you unaware? Surprised, Papa enquired.

"Really?" When I saw them, I furrowed my brow.

Is the entire incident a secret, and you expect me to know that Erick is involved?

What did he offer you—his blood? Even so, can vampire blood treat cancer?

"Vampire blood is like the best treatment ever made for humans,"

I was shocked to hear Papa's response. Since vampires can heal, humans may also be healed by ingesting or injecting vampire blood. But you didn't respond to my query. Can vampire blood make you well? Cancer? I asked once more, this time addressing Erick.

"I'm not sure," He gave a head shake. Nobody has ever experimented.though, even if they

It won't precisely make it available to everyone. Before you knew it, we would be

The authorities would use us as experimental animals, draining all of our blood and chopping us up into a

A million fragments.

So you intended to experiment on my father?

Shut up, you two! Oh my, Alina, is that your engagement ring?

Papa brought my hand up to his eyes. It's quite lovely. You like it.

What brings you two here all dressed up, Erick? He made a clear attempt to change the topic, and I shook my head at it.

They remained silent. Papa didn't at least try any of his blood.

"We're headed to a new blood bank's opening in

Moosonee, "Erick responded, finally disclosing his great secret.

this morning at this hour

"Oh! That's fantastic news! Papa exclaimed with joy and immediately took on the role of devoted manager. "Everyone has been anticipating that opening!

So continue. You won't have to wait long for me. It is crucial that you.

Show up on time.

"No, I prefer to arrive late in style." Erik grinned.

"Kids!" Papa groaned and then pushed us forward. Don't forget to give me images as you continue.

I'll do it. Erick stood up and headed for the door but stopped at the threshold. I'll be in the lobby, she said.

I turned back to my father after waiting for him to leave. Are you certain?

"How are you feeling, Papa?" I re-asked.

He smiled and said, "Do I not seem OK? "Are you alright, my little princess? When you return, I'll be right here to see me again. Your wedding is soon, and I won't be leaving till then! Sweetie, everyone must leave at some point, some sooner than others. It is a method.

Life. "I nodded, but deep down, I wanted to cry for a long time.

I need to release all of these feelings from my body. I had no idea how individuals.

I can deal with their parents' passing because they were the ones who gave them birth.

I never stopped asking Papa to be with me for as long as I was alive. I've

My mother had already passed away, so I didn't want to lose him either. "Right." I got up because I was worried that if I stayed too long, Papa could see me cry. I was hesitant to offer him anything since I worried about and harm his health since his condition is a little better today. "I'm leaving right now. Erick is standing by.

Papa stopped me in my tracks and said, "You know." Initially, I was

I was concerned about how the two of you might interact. He's a vampire, and we're humans, you know. But I now realize I don't longer need to worry.

Before I left, I grinned and hugged him despite my lack of comprehension. He meant to say that. Did we perform that well? Which seemed strange. I was very certain that Erick was the only one putting one up.

I had a mental picture of his smiling face. I saw him as this. A negligent, haughty vampire believed humans were only fit for consumption. But obviously, there was still a lot about him that I didn't know. He did something so out of character, something I never in a million years would have believed he'd do, just like I never expected him to visit Papa, just when I thought I knew everything about him.

Talked to him for a long time.

He was standing immediately outside the nursery, leaning on the wall across from him, as he saw the toddlers and babies making a huge mess in the play area. It was as though we were seeing another aspect of him.

Altogether.

"Ready?" He pulled himself from the wall and grabbed my hand as I approached. To join him in front. I replied, "Yes, let's go." I wondered when he started coming over. Not wanting to damage this new relationship by asking too many questions about Papa and why

I formed an opinion of him. So I remained silent.

"Then, let's go." The elevator doors opened, and we entered. They left to visit a group of vampires who would be in the blood bank, I'd prefer to rip out my neck than swig from a bag of donated blood. No

Amazingly, Erick managed to hide it from me for so long.

Don't worry, Erick whispered from his seat next to me. "I won't let anyone close you. No longer is anyone capable of mind reading, she said. Unless their blood is already in your system, my blood has already lost its potency. More than 24 hours have passed since I gave you a very.

"A little bit"

"I see. Therefore, the blood's ability to connect minds has a limited lifespan.

Limit, but what do you mean that's no longer possible? I grimaced. "This morning, you did. "

"Yes, I did, but as I stated, I cannot do so now. Moreover, your commitment.

The ring contains magic to prevent anyone with innate mind-reading ability. A weak vampire, my great-grandmother. She was powerless to stop. Although they were only intended to work on humans, vampiric compulsion. To keep her safe from mind-reading vampires and it was constructed, that ring. More than she does, you need it. Now. "He clarified.

I gave him a wide-eyed look before focusing on my ring. Indeed, a big burden was lifted off of my shoulders.

I said "thank you," which is something I never imagined I would ever say. Tell him.

Erick shifted his attention to me. Although he was also astonished, he kept quiet. The rest of the journey to Moosonee was uneventful.

Let's start the night off, shall we?

Chapter 15

Alina

Kendrick said, "We're here!" as soon as we pulled into the driveway.

First off, the chevalier Erick made his way to my side.

Please assist me at vampire speed.

There are people right there before you; what are you doing? "I complained.

So that any vampires in the audience won't hear us, I'm saying this quietly.

He laced my hand through his and grinned, "Contrary to what you think, I'm not an idiot. They're all vampires."

I remarked, "I thought we were here for the press conference."

"Press conferences are for dedicated, responsible people," he said as I observed several vampires, primarily couples, strolling around the sizable garden in front of the four-story mansion that served as the blood bank.

As though they were the worst traits a person could possess. "It's the following.

"A party where the fun is all over."

I remarked sarcastically, "And here I thought you were a changed person.

Kendrick parked the car and came over to join us. "I am," he retorted, "but no one said changed people can't party!" "Of course," I rolled my eyes. From a distance, I could hear the sound of waves. We must have been very near the ocean.

A man, Erick's age, jogged toward us shouting, "Erick!" He was attired.

I wore a suit, a white shirt, and some blue jeans. His dark brown hair and blue eyes matched Erick's, although they weren't as attractive. I couldn't believe I was making comparisons between him and other men. err... now, vampires. Please, God. I lost the ability to hear my thoughts. The new man flew from the entrance to the driveway, and I knew then that he was a vampire.

Erick turned away from me and ran to meet Jordan midway for a hug.

"Where have you been, man? It has been a while.

"Do you provide etiquette training?" As they parted ways, Jordan laughed.

"Ha. Funny. "Despite Erick's nasty expression, I could tell he enjoyed

I've never seen him among Erick's regular group of friends.

After the greetings, Jordan's eyes shifted to mine and lifted.

A raised eyebrow appears to be requesting an introduction to Erick.

Jordan, welcome to my

I'm aware, but hold on! "Before putting my hand in his and kissing my knuckles, he stepped around Erick and came to stand in front of me.

"It's lovely to meet Princess Alina Deluca, Erick's fiancée, finally.

Hello, I'm.

He raised his head, and I laughed awkwardly. "I'm grateful, but I'm

I think you miscalculated the honoraria. There is just Alina. Jordan scowled and glared at Erick, shaking his head, before turning back to me and saying, "I'm quite sure I haven't. You're engaged to Erick, and you're wearing his ring. You are now officially a princess as a result. "

"Really?

But won't that title apply after we're married? "I scowled as Erick came back to my side, and Jordan moved back.

"

"Sometimes, but given that you're about to become a royal bride, the title already."

"Eric the Prince! It's Prince Erick, look!

I heard a harsh female shriek, then a series of piercing screams.

Kendrick and Jordan took up defensive positions in front of me as soon as there was a sound, and before I knew it, we were encircled by a swarm of female vampires wearing striking but gorgeous dresses.

A little bit in front of me, Erick moved.

"Prince Erick, you look stunning in person.

The images!"

"Will you join us for a drink?"

I'm sure you'll find us to be a suitable company, Your Highness, so please join us. Lips were pouted, and eyelashes were hammered. Even some pulled as I stood behind Erick with my anger boiling and my teeth gritting, I let their gowns down to display the sensual curve of their breasts. I knew Erick was not only due to his position or riches but also because among he was regarded as one of the most attractive males among vampires.

But in all of this, I couldn't have anticipated the envy I experienced as I observed the There were several women around who, as a result of their vampires, resembled china dolls. Beauty.

Then Erick took a step that I would never have thought to take. And judging by the emotions on their faces, neither could,

"Thank you all for coming, and please enjoy the refreshments.

But first, he pulled me up to his chest and gave me a cheek kiss.

"Meet my fiancée, Alina," I said, ensuring that everyone could see the ring on my finger as the flattering glances quickly became deadly. Thankfully, Erick pulled me out in time.

It was a pleasure to meet you, so please enjoy the celebration."

Next, he turned to face the boys. Jordan, give us a moment to ourselves.

Kendrick. "After Erick excused us and grabbed my hand, he pulled me along a different path to a narrow, stony road wounding through the vegetation around the mansion is another mansion.

"What's the issue?

As he carried me further into the woods, I questioned, "Where are you talking to me?" The slamming of the waves against the shore's

With each stride we took, the shore grew louder.

Erick led the way inside and said, "Not now. They can hear us.

The cliff with a view of James Bay quickly replaced the forests.

"Good, no one can hear anything with these loud waves.

Erick pondered that they must hear us no matter how near we were.

I looked back at him, waiting for him to respond, but all he said was, "Look at me "How much of your mother's family history do you know, Alina?

Who is the family?

What a strange inquiry that was. "I am aware that my grandmother.

My grandfather was an ex-mayor and the West Coast High School principal, which is how he got to know your parents and you.

Why don't you know that my mum was a professor at a university?

I ask?"

He shook his head, "No. It's meaningless,

You're asking me about this; therefore, there must be something.

It is what? "

Let's say I was attempting to determine what made you think I was worthy of marriage. "He told a lie. I could tell you that much, but I had no idea what he was planning. Perhaps it was a result of seeing those lovely women.

Exist any females in the courtyard? Did he question my credibility? Why did I feel like I might pass out all of a sudden? Did he no longer desire to wed me?

"Alina, it's not what you're thinking. I have no intention of

I was merely wondering; the marriage is void."

My eyes grew wider. How did you find out?

You can be open like a book at times. I can see more of your face now.

Even if I can read him, you're always so close-up. "

So, I simply want to know what goes on in your thoughts all the time. Then he turned to stare towards the sea, the wind pushing his hair back from his face.

Nothing I'm doing is incorrect."

To restrain myself from extending my hand to him, I balled my hands into fists. Standing at the cliff's edge with the sun's halo surrounding me.

He found the view to be both breathtaking and depressing. Now, he appears to be such.

He had been surrounded by a huge crowd just seconds ago, but now he was alone.

Crowd. If our situation and the previous occurrences had been different

It would have been simple for Erick to fall in love with him.

He could abuse and tease people ruthlessly, yet when he cared for someone,

He sacrificed everything to keep them safe.

Erick stepped back from the water and said, "Let's go back now." People "Might" think something different.

Yes. After passing through the small area of vegetation that stood between the blood bank and the cliff, we turned back toward where we had come. My heels slid because I wasn't paying close enough attention to where we were going on a high branch of a tree.

Erick threw an arm over me to steady me and asked, "Are you OK? Until then, I was unaware that we had left the forest.

I stumbled and said, "Yes," and I think I now have a headache. "I leaned on him and said, "Thanks for the support. I had a tough day at the office, especially with Erick coming in and forcing that engagement ring into my finger and my veins." Additionally, I hadn't gotten much sleep the night before due to Erick.

He claimed to have given me some of his blood.
Just hold on for the next hour, and we'll be out of here, "I

He leaned against his shoulder and nodded, suddenly feeling worn out. This time, we entered the mansion and headed to the main hallway. Bordered by a few little chairs and tables. Small conversation groups of people were seated. And drank from wine glasses the given blood. There probably wouldn't be any excess blood when the visitors left if it went on like this. It was worn out. A conscious reminder that I wasn't one of them. We stood out from everyone else in this place like a lion and a mouse. Anyone in this room can quickly rip me to bits and won't even blink before squeezing every last drop of blood from my veins. The ring that caterwauled Erick's claim on me and his arms around me were the only things keeping them at bay.

Erick said, "Sit," and he seated me at a table away from the others.

Kendrick was signaled to follow him by me. He left after that, and I had a private conversation with Kendrick. Their voices were low enough to be drowned out by the noise in the room.

Jordan suddenly emerged from my right seat, making me chuckle. "Back from the woods already? didn't take Erick to be the sort. Who fancied barn sex? At the blatant teasing, I leaped out of my skin and forgot to flush. Ridiculous vampire speed

He said, "I apologise."

"It should be noted that a vampire truly apologized to me.

I said, "It's listed in the Guinness Book of Records for Vampires or whatever you guys call it."

commented

"Red Book of Extraordinary Things, and no, vampires haven't done any of them.

There are many more incredible things to anticipate. "If you're talking about the almighty vampire you're about to marry, then Jordan smiled since, On his left cheek, he had a dimple and looked lovely when he smiled.

Erick wants to improve relations between the two species, but then again, he grew up in So, he'll have to do it. Our Great King's parents, Valory and Kenna, aren't exactly friends of humans.

Give him some time to forget years of belief, and who knows?

Perhaps you'll be the one thing for which Erick has been waiting his entire life."

His claims were a little difficult to accept. Am I to take the place of Erick? Yes, perhaps when daisies start falling from the sky and hell freezes over. Maybe

We weren't discussing the same Erick, after all.

"How can you say that about Queen Kenna, who is such a kind and gentle person?

I replied incredulously, putting my thoughts about Erick on hold for the time being, "I'm a decent person."

Of course, to you, but have you ever seen her with someone else?

He answered earnestly, "I'm assuming not and hoping you don't. "You and I both like her.

I don't want you to believe anything else. She is a wonderful person, but she also.

And the royals all have the same belief that people are

We are beneath it,

You do not agree because you are present. Oh, Hold on! I assume that you are just here because I am Erick's fiancée. "I made amends.

"No. I enjoy people. Despite having such brief lives, they are content.

It's a beautiful present, in my opinion. His smile returned. "I do not believe in vampires.

I recognize the importance of life since it provides us the chance to experience everything, but only once. We aren't eternal, but we age extremely slowly.

We are more impulsive.

I produced a little smile and said, "Glad you think that."

He noticed, "You're worried.

"You must be, right?

I groaned, "I'm a person who is engaged to someone.

A unique vampire, not your typical vampire. I'm engaged to that prince, oh no. I have no idea why I was even selected for this position. Plus,

I have a lot of questions and things I want to learn, but I

I'm not sure who I should ask them. "

"I understand your perspective, but I'm aware of everything.

You'll discover the explanations in due course, he said. "Everything happens for a purpose," he said.

You said our world is full of secrets, but only because it's full of perils. Even for us vampires, knowledge can be hazardous at times. "

"OK, enough with the heaviness!

"To clear my head, I shook my head.

Tell me about yourself. You have known Erick, yet I've never seen you in his typical company. Jordan simply kept sounding like a withered old saint."

I'm his cousin, and I'm two years old, so I'm not his friend.

Above his age. I'm related to him through his mother. Father and his

The mother and father are siblings. You'll discover that the family has a large number of other members.

He interrupted a waiter carrying champagne rather than blood and said, "I can't tell you right now. He grabbed two glasses and gave me one.

"That's great; more secrets, and I'll find out you two worked together.

I complained, "Casanova back in college."

He was just taking a sip of champagne when he almost spits it out.

"I have to disagree with you on that one point. He'd been getting ready for the

He didn't go to a human college because he had held the throne for the last four years. I don't

I haven't seen him with anyone throughout that period. I am aware that I haven't spoken to

But everyone was eagerly anticipating the coming ruler. those are

Nobody can be lying at the same time. "

Erick had been celibate, so there was no way he could be serious.

OK, I need to get to "In the toilet," my brain was spinning; what have you done in the previous four years?

He noted, "Last room on the right-hand corner down the path."

I downed my champagne all at once and was on the verge of running to the lady's room when I realized I shouldn't have.

Since the booze was now making me a little lightheaded.

I once shut the front door and leaned against it without thinking about my hygiene.

I needed to leave this place, potentially out of the city or the nation, and never return. In and out. In and out. In and out. In and out. In and out. In and out. In and out. In and out. In and out.

While all he did was force me, Erick wasn't with anybody else.

Kenna, who I thought was a great person, might hate me enough to kill me if only I weren't special. Papa withheld that Erick visited him frequently, leading me to believe he was a heartless vampire. And Kenna, who I thought was a great person, might hate me enough to kill me if only I weren't special.

God forbid, how on Earth am I unique?

I went to the sink and splashed some water on my face before:

Right now, I didn't care if I looked like a mess, so I wiped it clean.

I felt dizzy and needed to get out of here as quickly as possible.

I didn't believe I could go on for very long.

I took a big breath once I got some of my composure back.

My heart stopped once more as soon as I left the room.

"Oh my God! Erick! How many times must I nudge you? not to believe anything that merely appears? And why did you?" I yelled angrily at him. "Should I change?"

He said, "Sorry to scare you," and my eyebrows dropped into my hairline. He was wearing a black suit, saying, "I couldn't possibly wander around like that. Someone tripped and splattered blood all over my clothes.

Hey, might have been inside, wearing a red jacket, red pants, and a red shirt with a red shirt underneath. The auto.

That makes sense, I suppose. The man's voice, though, There was just something off. Perhaps I merely heard things. Since I've been experiencing a "Revelation Day" today, I couldn't hold it against myself.

"It's becoming late. Do you want to leave and walk around the cliff?

Erick said, "It's suffocating in here.

I was on my way to get you, so it about times we..."

I believe you went for a stroll, so come on. Before I could finish, he interrupted me and pulled me along. Weird. How was he acting?

I protested as he pulled me behind him, "But we just arrived here!" back through the trees.

When?" he questioned.

"Erick, you brought me here to inquire about me; how can you forget?

How did Erick forget we were here? He had the best memory I've ever seen. Something stung at the back of my mind. "I suddenly have a family," I said.

I was having some extremely in-depth conversations, so I said, "Sorry, it slipped my mind."

Maybe he was correct as we approached the clearing with the cliff just before us.

When I last saw him, he had a serious conversation with Kendrick.

I went close to the bluff to watch the waves crash this time.

The blue waves appeared like they were crashing on the cliffs below.

The sun was orange as it was setting.

"You are correct. There have been far too many lengthy conversations today. Jordan even—"

"Jordan? Is he here? Did he speak to you, by the way?" Now that he had asked, I was certain something was wrong.

"So, who are you?"

"The moment I turned around to face him with the wind whipping my hair in front of my face, I realized what I had been missing all along: His eyes weren't the alluring electric blue of the Erick I knew.

One was the same blue as Erick's, but the other was lighter and had a tinge of green, which was not Erick's color.

Erick's.

"What made it obvious? My eyes, what's up? No, no! It has to be me.

He did have a fairly British accent, now that he brought it up.

A faint British accent. It had to be what gave his voice its peculiar quality right away.

It saddens me, but it was enjoyable; what a brief encounter.

I repeated, "Who are you?" "What do you require of me?"

Was I brought here by you? "Finally, fear began to set in. On a cliff, by myself. All other sounds are muffled by the waves distant from the home, possibly on top of a mad vampire. The chances weren't on my side. He said, "From you? Nothing. From Erick? What properly belongs to me?" I thought I saw a momentary flash of red in his eyes. He chuckled, "But since you're the key to what Erick wants, I have to get past you to obtain what I want from him. Key? What in the world was he on about?"

He smiled at me and started walking slowly and deliberately towards me. "Doesn't make any sense to you, I know. Just know that, right now, You're going to have to die.

"Please, don't do this. Just... "Please let me go," I begged, but he didn't seem to hear me. My heart was trapped in the chilly grip of fear.

There didn't appear to be any escape routes to this predicament.

He had Erick's face, but his aura was different; I felt like I could almost touch the evil force emanating from him. He was out for blood and wouldn't stop until he got what he wanted.

To think he resembled Erick in appearance, he received what he desired.

I've reached the cliff's edge when I soon felt the ground give way to air beneath my feet, and I retracted a step, barely managing to regain my balance.

It was nice to meet you, Alina. Oh, and I'm Emiel, just in case you were wondering. Looks like the only way for you to go is down.

I wanted to inform you.

"No! Please say no! "He gave me another of his creepy smiles before pushing me back over the precipice, and I begged weakly as he closed the final gaps.

"Erick!

"

Just as I lost my footing, I yelled and closed my eyes.

At that precise moment, I reached for mine.

"Alina!

"

There was no misunderstanding this time, Erick; I recognized this voice.

He touched me, and I knew it was Erick!

He gave me a powerful lift back into his arms and tightly hugged me. "Are you hurt, Alina?

"Before I could respond, I heard that laugh again, the laughter of a man saying, "Talk to me."

madman

"Excellent timing, beloved brother. Too bad I can't watch the show in person. I'll hopefully see you soon.

The last thing I could think of before my vision vanished was

Like a wind blast, Emiel vanished from my line of sight.

Chapter 16

Richard Seagulls Those disgusting tiny things.

If only I could grab one of those dang brats! Yes, as if that were going to be of any use. When you remove one, a thousand replace it.

The advantages of owning a beach house, ah. I did not need an alarm. These such pests well did the job of waking you up at three in the morning.

I sat up sleepy, rubbing the sleep from my eyes. I felt alarmed. I was scanning the space when I realized I was missing the comforting warmth to me. Last night, I found myself sleeping beside her out of fear.

Emiel might re-access her if I left her unattended.

"Alina?" I screamed. Did she leave the moment I did? I was unable.

If she did, then I'd hold her responsible. For her, yesterday—hell, the entire week—has been terrible. But she needed to understand that she couldn't just run away. She was too intrigued just to get up and leave without hearing the whole tale.

It was the first time in my life that I had such fear yesterday.

The worst feeling in the world was the fear of losing Alina. Even

I've felt terrible leaving her all alone ever since that incident four years ago, but I

He knew that continuing to be with her would only put her in greater danger. I left her because I couldn't bear to wake up in a world without her. Alone. Because I knew it would keep her safe, I let her hate me. I went back. I suppose I thought for sure that she wasn't in danger, but it appears that I was mistaken. He remained outside.

I rose from the bed and headed for the restroom. I required a very lengthy shower. I needed to calm down because I smelled strongly of alcohol.

I could follow Alina if I wanted to.

"I believed you left,"

Her back to the kitchen counter sputtered and spun around to face me.

"God! "You scared the hell out of me; stop that!" she yelled.

A hand was placed on her chest. My ears delight in the sound of her heartbeat. She

I had no idea how challenging it would be to maintain my composure around her. She was bleeding

Given who she was, it should be no surprise that it was the tastiest thing I had ever tasted. Was.

I said it again, "I thought you had left." When I emerged from the shower and saw her delicate form, I realized that my earlier assumptions were incorrect.

I detected an earthy smell. I was drawn in by the scent of red roses growing on soggy ground.

Made Alina feel cozy and at home. I left the living room and entered the kitchen.

When I followed the scent, she was preparing breakfast for us in one of my tees and shorts.

"Oh, no! If you don't give me an explanation, I'm not going.

She replied, "We were out of eggs so I went to the grocery store." I

The fact that she simply used the pronoun "we" despite not staying with me led me to believe that she was unaware of it herself.

In my attire? Nice. "I grinned. Fortunately, she was covered in my scent, but another important subject was also covered. However, stupid. Especially after yesterday, you shouldn't have gone out on your own.

The reminder caused her face to fade, and it hurt me to see her like that.

Vulnerable. "Hey." I approached her and helped her stand up so I could stand between her legs as she sat on the kitchen counter. "Drink this from here." I

The tea mug she had set out for the two of us was handed to her.

After taking a sip, she set the cup on the counter. Tilting her, She raised her hands to grab the sides of my buttoned-down shirt. What made you aware that I was in danger? It was my fault, but I had a hunch. I ought not to have abandoned you.

Alone. "She clung to me more closely after I encircled her in my arms.

How were you certain it wasn't me?

Her lips made an intimate caressing motion against my skin. "I apologized too much, he said. It caused my lips to curl as well.

It was uncharacteristic of Alina to be affectionate toward me. She was

I had detested her for almost all of her life, so I was surprised by how quickly she changed.

The events of yesterday had seriously rattled her. I frequently had nightmares.

I stayed up all night, fearing that if I hadn't been there in time, she might have fallen and died on the jagged rocks at the bottom of the pool.

Cliff.

In a split second, my arms grew closer to her. "It's a

"Curse."

"What?" She raised her head and gave me a curious look. He let her go and moved away.

"Mere 5,000 years ago, the twins Marcellus and Tobias,

They were brothers who were raised in the Royal Family. It was unusual for vampires.

Our fertility rates were already extremely low, so I went on. Thomas was

Tradition dictated that since Marcellus was an hour older than him, he should

He will succeed to the throne of England. Marcellus, however, desired the kingdom for himself. His

His ego and gluttony prevented him from resting until he had everything. Thus, in the evening, Marcellus tricked Tobias into drinking Tangenika extract at the coronation. Tanganyika is a plant extract that, when consumed in small doses, has drug-like effects but can also.

If consumed in large doses, it can cause paralysis in the user. It's said to only.

If the user is a vampire, it works.

In my family, this tale has been handed down through the generations, so

Since my life was intertwined with the event, remembering it wasn't that difficult.

This bizarre fairy tale

After that, what happened to Tobias? Breaking the hush, Alina questioned.

I proclaimed, "Marcellus killed him in cold blood." He murdered himself.

Brother. Because vampires don't let their emotions rule them, Marcellus' actions were heinous for a vampire. His greed crept up on him. First, our population of vampires is already declining, and we can't do anything about it.

By killing one another, let it diminish even more. As a result of natural selection, we

Humans have been murdered,

Their race was destroyed. It involved the heinous killing of a royal by another royal.

Members when they were brothers, as well. It had negative effects. There was a riot in the kingdom. Tobias's father, Marcellus, the previous king, had immediately ordered their execution to prevent civil war among our race.

After Marcellus was put to death, the fighting subsided, but the

Both the execution of the murderer and the future king's demise led to

The vampire race's contagious effects People who had previously harbored

They saw this as an opening and were motivated by feelings of avarice or jealousy. To start a killing spree. In the end, humans were also non-human animals, in addition to vampires.

Nearly everyone knew who we were, but

Dominick was a wise ruler. He was able to gather every one of the

The people were restored after he tracked down the troublemakers and personally killed them.

They now have more confidence in the Royal Family.

But ultimately, the cost was too high. Hundreds of people

After the vampires were eliminated, only a few hundred people remained in our population. Dominick knew that everything would start over if another similar incident occurred. He made the prediction that is going forward, any.

The Royal Family will separate any twins that are born. Marcellus'

One of the twins would be under the supervision of the backers and heirs, and the other would

The Royal Family kept the other. The Royal Family was split, and Marcellus's descendants were banished to a remote region of the nation where everyone despised them. The upcoming king was chosen to be Tobias' unborn child. After that, Four additional twins were born to our family over the years; they were all divided at birth and socialized to hate one another. We are the fourth, Emiel and I.

"Like everyone who has come before us, we share the same destiny.

Alina

I listened to what he said and mentally processed everything, but I

I was unable to comprehend it.

Due to one set of twins' animosity toward one another, they were

Was it all due to some ridiculous prophecy? That made no sense at all!

"I know your thoughts, but you must realize we are not human. More than 7 billion people live there. If you think about The number of zeros that follow the seven is significantly higher.

Unlike ours. He clarified, "There are only a few thousand vampires in existence. a formal

War can and will exterminate our race, but the loss of just a few.

Thousands won't significantly impact the human population. "All right, you're being utterly illogical now. Even though there are only a few thousand of us, you speak of us as if we are a swarm of easily crushed bugs. Do you even value human life? I inquired, a little disappointed that

They spoke so carelessly of us as people.

Chapter 17

Alina

I opened my eyes to the sound of my phone. I moaned as I reached over to my nightstand and grabbed my phone.

The time displayed was 3:15 in the afternoon. "Hello?" I replied groggily, avoiding my gaze from the screen.

"Good day, sweets! In two hours, I'll be there to pick you up.

You OK with that?" Shit! Ryan! I had forgotten that entirely.

He required me to join him at a business dinner.

This morning when I visited my father in the hospital, he seemed to have gotten worse, so I went home and cried myself to sleep.

Since yesterday, I haven't eaten anything and have only been getting by on coffee.

"Yes!" I picked up, recalling Ryan was still on the line.

"That's OK with me. I appreciate you letting me know, Ryan.

I completely missed it! I didn't have to be ashamed or try to hide the truth.

Ryan was aware of my predicament.

"I called because I anticipated it might occur. Are you alright?

You seem worn out. Sweets, you're not required to attend if you don't want to.

Ryan said, sounding genuinely concerned, "Just tell me.

"No, no problem. I'll go. I'll only become more depressed if I stay home,"

I said.

If you tell me to, Ryan said, "I'll see you in a bit," and hung up.

. I sighed and sat in bed, immediately falling back down.

For a brief moment, my vision went blank, and I felt a headache coming on.

I moaned and stood up again, much more slowly this time.

. Even though I knew I should eat, I didn't have the appetite.

Last night when I tried to eat, I threw it all back out.

What was wrong with me was unknown to me.

Oh wait, I did know what happened to me. Erick Stayton was there.

I finally managed to get out of bed and immediately went to the bathroom to take a long, hot shower.

I couldn't help but wince as I stood in front of the bathroom mirror while wrapping a towel around myself.

No, it wasn't because I was ugly or scarred—those things had long since faded.

It was because I had large, black bags under my eyes that wouldn't go away despite getting a lot of sleep.

The puffiness from all the crying came next.

The internal conflict I felt about having Erick back in my life appeared on my face.

I was annoyed that Erick hadn't paid me a single visit in the previous four years.

Despite the fact that all I desired to do was hate him constantly, it made me miss him. My father's condition worsened, and I had trouble keeping myself together because my mind was a complete mess.

The world around me was disintegrating.

My eyes weren't as puffy after my shower, and I felt much more at ease.

I only had a little more than an hour to get ready. I saw the clock.

I went to my closet and browsed my collection of dresses.

I had to wear a dress because the dinner was formal.

The guidelines were rigid. My favorite color was green, so most of my wardrobe was green. However, for tonight, I went in a plain blue sleeveless dress.

I decided to put on silver heels and teardrop-shaped sapphire earrings.

But they weren't excessively high.

. I could never stand high heels.

Why should I endure such torture when they made my feet hurt so bad?

I then took my iron out and started curling my hair in loose ringlets to give myself a more elegant look. Ryan was due to arrive in fifteen minutes, but it took a while for my hair to dry and hang loosely down my back.

So I hurriedly put on some eyeliner and light pink lipstick.

I also applied concealer to eliminate the dark circles under my eyes temporarily.

I completed my outfit with a silver band watch and some lavender cologne.

I grabbed a silver clutch and stuffed my phone, card, and cash inside. I got a cup from my kitchen and filled it with water and instant coffee before heating it in the microwave.

I was attempting to eat something despite not having an appetite.

It would require throwing up everything, and I was not in the mood for that. My coffee was ready when the microwave flashed twice, so I took it out and sipped it slowly. Even though I could feel my vertigo returning, I gritted my teeth and held onto the counter.

"It'll be OK.

In a minute, I'll be fine, I told myself.

After a minute or two, the lightheadedness disappeared, but I wasn't quite feeling myself.

Ryan's cancellation at this time was not an option, so

I steadied myself.

With an iron will, I was ready to face whatever came my way tonight.

The coffee was quickly consumed, the cup was placed in the sink, and I put on my shoes.

When Ryan arrived, I was about to wait for him on the couch when the doorbell rang.

It was still five seventeen in the afternoon when I checked my watch.

Being on time was a terrible habit that Ryan had.

I found a familiar Southeast Asian smiling as I opened the door.

Ryan Paul had a nice body with lean muscles and that awesome Asian tan that our office staff desperately wanted.

He had brown eyes, black hair, and a fairly angular face with cute dimples that showed up when he smiled.

He was a handsome man all around.

He was sporting a red shirt underneath a black Armani suit this evening. He seemed to like me and was a total charmer, but I didn't feel the same about him.

He asked with a smile, "Ready to go, sweets?"

I replied, stepping out and closing the door behind me, "Sure, let's go.

His black SUV was waiting at the entrance to my building when we descended the stairs.

As we drove to the location, he assisted me in getting into the vehicle.

It took about an hour and a half to drive to some Italian restaurant close to the beach.

Around six forty-five in the evening, we arrived.

The restaurant appeared to be operating successfully on its own, but they requested our assistance in promoting their establishment in our magazine to increase their clientele further.

Ryan already had the tools at his disposal to take pictures of the restaurant inside so we could upload them with the document.

When we arrived at the upscale restaurant's parking lot, Ryan parked in the VIP area.

People were continuously coming from the entrance as the parking lot was almost full.

Let's leave. As he got out of the car, Ryan said, "Let's not hold up the gentlemen and ladies.

"Is the owner of the restaurant here?" I questioned Ryan as he assisted me exiting his vehicle, a bag containing a camera and other equipment hanging from his free arm.

He then took my arm and rested it against the inside of his elbow.

I knew I should probably correct him because that was not a very friendly gesture, but perhaps I could allow it for one night.

The restaurant's owner requests that we write an article about it and her heir.

We're writing an article together because she also owns a sizable textile company.

He claimed that the interview benefits both parties because it will significantly increase our TRP.

But I forgot my recorder at home!

I cried out in horror. I completely forgot the digital recorder that would capture their voices in my haste.

It was intended to go along with the video feed we intended to broadcast on a nearby cable channel.

"Sweethearts, don't worry! You are carrying your phone. Make a note there. As we entered the restaurant, he said, "I'm sure it'll record just fine as long as there is no background noise.

For me, Ryan held open the door. Are you certain we can manage without a crew?

I questioned, unsure if, given my condition, I could pull it off. You won't need to worry; just relax. He took my hand and unexpectedly kissed the back of my palm.

A waitress walked up, and I was too shocked to respond.

Immediately direct us to the manager's office.

Ryan took ownership of the recording equipment before handing the camera to me.

I suddenly started to feel a little anxious.

It seemed as though something was about to occur, and it would be something I absolutely would not like.

The waitress led us to a more private restaurant area where couples sat on love seats and cuddled or just savored their meals. Each booth featured a unique color scheme and an overhanging light.

I wanted to take pictures of at least one couple to use in the magazine.

As we entered through the tinted glass doors, the waitress said, "Gentlemen, your guests have arrived."

. As soon as we turned the corner, their conversation ended, and I felt sick.

As Ryan introduced us, I could not take my eyes off his smirking face because they were still huge. The devil was sitting in one of the chairs, grinning broadly and sporting a dark glint in his magnificent blue eyes.

Mr. Eric Stayton

Chapter 18

Erick kept his word to Alina. Since the day he last called or visited, he
He revealed everything, and it confused me to no end. Nevertheless, he

Although I didn't say it out loud, I am fairly certain of what it is.

What occurred a year ago? The sole query was, "Why?"

I couldn't help but feel uneasy despite everything he said. If he

It would have made me feel more at peace if they were here. But I had no idea when or how
this had begun. It was clear that I felt safe with him, which is how I always feel when I'm with
him. I had been missing it for a very long time.

I had this feeling even when we were young, and he first started feeding on me.

I strongly feel that none of his death threats were true. I was too afraid of him to look past
the fact that he was a vampire and a predator capable of instantaneous death.

However, at this time, those things weren't significant because

I quickly made a choice that went beyond simply giving this.

Give getting married a shot. As my future, Erick was accepted.

"Here." I informed Mr. Maxwell, my boss, of my resignation.

"Ms. Deluca, are you sure about this? No reinstatement is our policy.

After receiving my letter, he responded, "We have a policy for our employees.

"I am aware, and I am steadfast in my choice." I did not take

I decided right away to resign from my position. I gave everything some careful thought before making my choice.

It wouldn't be easy to marry Erick. I would wed to fulfill my duties as a princess and become the

To be deserving to be by his side, I need to become accustomed to their way of life. I would need to invest a tonne of work for that. With all that, I didn't think I could balance my work. It was time for me to accept my place in a brand-new world.

Mr. Maxwell sighed and said, "Very well then. It was enjoyable.

I can't wait to work with you. You have edited some excellent pieces. I wish you success.

"Regardless of where you're going,

I appreciate it, Mr. Maxwell. I shook his hand as I walked out of the office.

Then it's true, right?

Ryan, "Oh my God!" I covered my racing heart with my hand. I nearly suffered a heart attack as a result of you. (Why did everybody believe it was acceptable? Come up behind me?

He said, "Sorry," but his expression was contrite as he stood in his white pants and a navy shirt. I said I saw you enter but didn't leave for your cabin. I caught you going into the boss's office at that point."

Yes, I just gave him my letter of resignation. I clumsily

I rubbed my back.

"How about today I take you out to lunch?" He pleaded formally, "Please. It was a little bit too polite for my tastes. It most likely indicated that he had a lot to say to me.

"Sure."

We visited an Indian deli because lunchtime was just around the corner.

The office is not far from here.

What about garlic naan and butter chicken? Ryan questioned me, already aware of

Due to the enormous number of times we've been here, this is my favorite.

So that no one could see us, we took a seat in the back of the deli.

They heard what we were saying. After placing our orders, we sat there awkwardly, silent.

We are waiting patiently for our meal.

OK, spill that! I told him in frustration as he continued to look away. Reach out to me.

"Are you getting married to him because he's wealthy?"

You now know what a jealous man would have thought of first. He desires women but is aware that he cannot have them. Ryan's The day he told him about our engagement, my

feelings for Erick were obvious. Although I anticipated some sort of response from him, I didn't anticipate

Ryan wasn't finished yet.

"I'm more than capable of taking care of your father's treatment if that's the case.

I'll be there for you. Why did you feel compelled to select Erick Stayton? Do you know what the media is saying about him? He's a playboy billionaire. He is only utilizing you."

And why would he be using me for that? I retaliated. You've been reading the tabloids, and we've been reporting on him.

Do you believe he has a weakness he can exploit by using me?"

You're saying that he truly cares about you, then? the length

Do you even remember him? Seven days? Through clenched teeth, he uttered, "Two?"

I, at last, discovered what caused his rage. "Why, do you suppose he asked?

Has he proposed to me since we first met at the Italian restaurant? While our food was being delivered, I stopped." I grew up with Ryan and Erick. We have been engaged ever since shortly after my birth.

Ryan sat eerily motionless. I tried to control the situation because I thought They would be shocked to learn the truth about Erick and me. Delicately.

"I began by putting my hand over Ryan's and saying, "I know you have

Although I appreciate your concern and compassion for me, I am disappointed.

I'm sorry I can't feel the same way. I don't just do it because I'm engaged to

Erick. He needs me by his side more than you do, which is why. For sure

Someone much better than I will be waiting for you."

Ryan finally grinned. You cherish him.

I tensed up when I heard the word "love." Love? Erick, can I love you?

The times I spent with Erick suddenly came to mind, including our early interactions as children and that particular incident.

We kissed when he came back into our lives.

When he rescued me from Emiel on that cliff four years later,

I deeply care about him, "I responded to his implicit query.

"I see." Ryan covered my hand with his free hand and gave it a small squeeze. So let's eat our final meal together in peace, I say. The meals are

He said, "It's getting cold," and then ate.

"Why finally?" I questioned as I tore off a piece of my naan and dipped it into the creamy gravy.

"Your boss failed to inform you? My relocation to New York."

I halted my chewing. 'New York,' I questioned, letting out a voice. Inaudible. I gulped before rephrasing my question.

Yes, I received a job offer from KYN as a senior journalist. The

"The pay is decent, so I'm considering moving."

"Ryan!" I hit him on the arm. Why didn't you inform me earlier? "You were out of the office when I was about to, so I didn't get the chance. "to," he elucidated. By the way, I'm leaving the following day. "The reason I said it's

"Our final supper."

How soon? A little disappointed that I wouldn't be able to see him, I questioned. Not too soon.

Yes, I wanted to let you know sooner, but I understand that you've been busy, so

Uncomfortably, Ryan scratched the back of his neck.

You wanted me to accompany you, right? I assumed, Sighing, Ryan. "Yes, but I wasn't aware of your engagement back then. I vowed."

I replied, "I know," in all sincerity. I expressed my gratitude for your assistance when I needed it. You're a wonderful friend."

"I know."

As we finished our lunch, we continued to talk. Eventually, after much nagging from me, Ryan paid the bill. After that, we parted ways and made promises. We agreed to get together once he returns from vacation or when I go to New York. Once

He was gone. I gave the waiter a second call.

'Yes, ma'am. Would you like to place another order?" "Yes," two rosewater lassis, one for me and the other

"In the seat behind me is a woman.

The waiter gave me a peculiar expression before nodding and walking away. Way.

But the lady in question turned around in her chair and stared at me.

Hello, Kenna. I gave her a sweet smile.

She was walking into the deli right behind me, I saw. I initially believed I was mistaken. Why, after all, would the vampire world's most powerful woman start following me? However, it was impossible to mistake Kenna, especially since the entire.

The restaurant appeared to neglect its duties and pay some attention to her. perhaps she

I wasn't deliberately following me. When I saw you on the road, she might have just happened to be entering a deli with an odd, attractive man.

I moved in my wake. Knowing she didn't trust me, it did hurt a little. "I apologize." She threw up her hands in resignation. "When I saw you with that young man, I was merely passing. I wasn't going to make a big deal out of it at first, but then I started to wonder."

She moved seats and sat down next to me, and I said, "I guess that much." You could have simply asked. I suppose I have nothing now.

Since you overheard the entire conversation, I don't need to explain anything."

"I suppose." She grinned sheepishly at me. Today, she wore a red dress, red heels, and a white hat with red ribbons and flowers. She looked stunning as usual. I occasionally desired to be

Even on a bad hair day, I would become a vampire just to look flawless.

What are you doing out here by yourself, exactly?

Want me to tell you a lie? or do you want me to be completely honest?

She smiled and said, "Pretty lie.

I said, "Honesty would be great."

She began, "Well, you see," and leaned in close as if to explain.

Her blue eyes held a hint of mischief that I believe was hiding some dark secret.

Erick would frequently say, "I was lonely."

My hairline was where my brows ended. "You felt alone? The supreme Queen Kenna Stayton, the queen of all vampires, was lonely."

Even while that may seem unusual, it is true. She grinned again. "Therefore, I reasoned that I could spend some quality time with my future daughter-in-law. Do you mind at all?"

"No." Even though I was shocked by her admission, I didn't mind her

Be present in any way. Since I didn't have any work to do and the wedding preparations were taking up my time, I felt quite alone.

I confessed, "It's taken care of.

She asked, clearly surprised, "You resigned?"

"Oh, right now. Why is that so unexpected?"

"Even though it will soon become problematic, she said, "I just assumed you'd still want a little bit of your old life.

"Kenna." My hand sat on top of hers. "when I consented to wed

Erick, I All the obligations that came with it, I accepted. I won't be doing that.

It nags and is obstinate. If I did, I'm pretty sure my mother would be upset. I

I want to embrace my role wholeheartedly."

Kenna grinned at me in relief. "Your mom would be extremely pleased with you today," I said."

"Yeah? I'm happy."

The waiter approached us to take our orders before departing, but not before giving us bewildered looks. After a lengthy discussion about it, Kenna offered to drop me off at home.

You're not carrying any guards, are you? I questioned as I entered the

In her Ferrari's backseat,

"Alina, I am a 400-year-old vampire.

I can take care of myself, she boastfully replied.

However, what if Emm—" He won't attack you, would he? I realized what I had just said as I stopped mid-sentence. Despite everything that has happened,

No matter what, he will always be your son.

Kenna's grip grew tighter on the wheel, but she could still maneuver the car easily. "Emiel has so far avoided both his father and me, and I'm not sure why. All of his rages appear to be reserved exclusively for Erick. It's peculiar. When twins were last born in our family, the abandoned twin pursued his

Emiel, however, never did.

I told her after a long pause, "Kenna, I'm sorry." "I'm

I'm sorry you lost your son due to a foolish prophecy.

Kenna chuckled irrationally. "Stupid is indeed correct. It is absurd to assume that because one twin did something, the other twins will all be out for blood. However, that is the way things are in the world. The Royal Household

We have a responsibility to lead by example. If any of our members are murderous,

How can we anticipate different behaviour from others if we are willing to kill one another to claim the throne?

Is murder committed in the name of law, money, or property? The outside world is harsh.

"Kenna said, "Parking in front of my apartment, you were there, and you are now going to be a part of it.

Kenna, I'm not scared; I'm just disappointed. You ought to be superior to us. You can't change the law in any way, can you?" I enquired not only

No child should ever be torn apart because the law was immoral. Under no circumstances will it leave its mother's arms.

"These laws are part of who we are, Alina." She turned to face me and touched my cheek with one hand. But perhaps someone with a human heart will be able to change our perspective.

She gave me the task of calming a whole family and pulling someone back from the brink at that moment.

Chapter 19

Alina That night, sleep came easily. After that conversation with Kenna, I could not hold her human distrust against her. I would behave in a similar manner if I were in her shoes.

Position. I was most pleased that I was able to talk to her about Emiel. Now, I

He was confident that she harbored an unrequited love for him.

I hadn't interacted with her this closely before. When

My parents were still alive and allowed me to stand to the side and smile simply.

I was required to sit and listen to my mother speak because proper etiquette called for it. I enjoyed getting to know my mother's friend better. It was similar to meeting a new person.

I finally arrived after a very long time. I saw another side of her and was at peace.

Someone knocked on my front door very late in the evening. At

I initially believed I imagined things. After all, who could be at my door knocking?

Is it already 2:30 in the morning? Then I recalled the security officers outside. I was suddenly overcome with fear. Suppose Emiel had discovered me.

Therefore, rather than attempting to be a heroine who defies all odds,

I decided to be that person who gets into trouble and gets killed or kidnapped.

Rational and called Erick. It was then that I noticed the ringtone.

Right outside my door, I let out a sigh of relief.

"You took too long. Were you sleeping? He shoved me.

Into my living room, too. Sure Erick, come on in, I sarcastically thought.

As I slammed the door, I rolled my eyes.

That's what normal people say at 2:30 in the morning, "Yes, Erick." Exasperated, I yelled while raising my hands in the air. I was on the ground, about to faint. I was completely spent.

Did my mother tell you the location and details of the wedding? "He made an unexpected inquiry.

"What? Why did she act that way? I am aware of where and how to" Shit! She'd forget, I knew. She believes that you ought to be aware of this.

beforehand." She stood there gaping at him like a goldfish as he turned to face me, looking all pale and concerned.

"However, I just said that! I am aware of where and how weddings take place.

To occur! "I said.

"

"You do? Really? If so, enlighten me because it is obvious that a church is not where this wedding will be held." His arms were crossed over his chest.

I'm awaiting a response.

"Oh?" I sat in awe as I regarded him. "So, where will it happen?"

"Erick, this location is..."

Kind of creepy, I admit.

"Beautiful! It's stunning beyond words! "I yelled while spinning around to get a 360-degree perspective.

I wasn't even slightly exaggerating. This location was truly magnificent.

It might have seemed like a sizable mountain from the outside if you hadn't noticed.

On top of the building, the angels were seated. In the dark, they served as sentinels. In preparation for flight, they hunched forward with their bodies bent and wings spread widely. Their faces were barely visible. Although the moonlight was dim, the statues were flawless. I would have expected them to

If Erick hadn't told me otherwise, they were real.

Erick informed me that vampire marriages do not occur inside of a

He immediately literally dragged me out of the house and into the church. Gives me just enough time to layer a robe over my nightgown. He put me in his car and took off to show me where our wedding would be. I drove for almost fifteen minutes before I passed out.

Erick woke me up by calling my name and informing me that we had arrived.

Our final stop

The Constantia is its name. It is the holy vampire temple, "said he. said while indicating the mountain. The gates are typically closed, but occasionally they are flung open. However, we are free to come and go as we please, just like in a church. There is a door that only vampires can unlock."

So, we are unable to go sightseeing? I questioned as I approached the cliff near the Constantia.

Silver glimmered on the water in the moonlight. A waterfall that fell into the ocean replaced Constantia. It was far too dark to see. I couldn't see anything but a glimmer of light emanating from that direction.

Constantia's complete opposite. Houses, perhaps? I had no idea. "Unfortunately, no, but if you're interested, I could explain how our wedding will go." He sat back against the car's bonnet. He had his hands in the pockets of his pants.

Of course, Erick, I want to know. Stop making the tension last longer." I

He leaned against the bonnet next to him.

As I previously stated, this wedding will not be like other church weddings. have you ever seen, "He clarified. We'll go into the Constantia first, I said. our respective groups are escorting us. We will then have a Tangenika branch tied around our arms. The anti-clotting would prevent the thorns from piercing our skin. An agent in the plant will keep the blood flowing. Not to worry. We both won't get hurt, so don't worry. Then our blood will be collected in a colander and offered As a sacrifice to our gods, Hades, the God of all dark creatures, and Nyx, Goddess of the Night Our blood will be collected in a goblet and allowed to mix after the offering has been accepted. Once we've drank the blood and the binding has taken hold, the ritual will be finished."

He explained the rituals to me as I was fixated on the waterfall. Honestly,

They sounded much bloodier than any wedding I had ever heard of, but it's still a wedding.

What more could I ask for at a vampire wedding? I raised an eye to see his face. Glowed softly in the moonlight. I found it hard to believe I was with him here. Learn specifics about our upcoming nuptials right now. I believed it to be impossible. Even a month ago, but now that the wedding is so close, I wanted to undergo

Since Erick is present, I don't mind at all. Knew I was safe with him.

So the reception won't feature any dancing? I queried. I

I wouldn't dare claim to have missed that. When it arrived, I appeared to have two left feet.

To move.

"Want to dance right now?" Out of the blue, Erick questioned.

"Now? Here?" I took in the desolate scenery, the gentle

The angels atop the Constantia stood sentinels against the night, the moonlight, and the grass beneath our feet, and we wondered, "Why not?"

Erick smiled at me after I told him.

With the remote in his hand, he turned on the stereo, and a soft

Through the speakers, a melody began to play. To me, he extended his hand. "Shall"

Should we?

"Yes." I wrapped his neck with one hand while placing the other on his.

Began to nod slightly in time to the music. The moon served as our spotlight as we

Up until the sun's first rays touched the horizon, they danced.

Chapter 20

Alina

Why can't you attend the wedding, you ask?

You know I can't, honey. There are some guidelines to follow to

Papa jokingly said, "This is a mortal world, and I have no desire to become their dinner."

Yet you would permit me to take your place? I told him in astonishment.

I tried to look serious, but even Papa could see that I was laughing. He patted my head and said, "Honey, I doubt Erick finds me that attractive."

My eyes started to burn with tears. Everything happened far too quickly. I

All I wanted was for things to calm down and give me some breathing space. Every

Every girl dreams of her wedding day, especially when her father will be there.

She should be given to her husband. I was no exception. I always wanted to be me.

The same big church wedding with all of my friends is how I envision my wedding to be.

My family, including Dad, escorted me while Mom complimented my outfit and makeup. To my happily ever after, I made my way down the aisle. But for me, it was no longer an option. My mother served as my primary example, and my dreams died the day she passed away. Dad was never the same without her and in so many ways,

I wasn't either.

"Hey." Papa raised my chin with his shaking hands. I long for her.

However, don't let the past interfere with your happiness. Life continues.

You must swear to me that you will only make progress. Set aside

Maintain your composure and live in the present.

Hopes for what lies ahead.

Even with the tears running down my cheeks, a smile formed on my lips.

Cheeks. That's how Mom used to put it.

"Exactly!" For the first time, I got to enjoy watching my father smile. Length in years

What is your method? I queried. Even in the worst-case scenarios, "How do you always stay so calm? "Even when my mother passed away, he remained that way. He gave off a strong impression in front of me and consoled me even after I learned that he had cancer. I witnessed him lose it when they took my mother's body to the morgue to be cremated.

"It's simple," He grinned. I was aware that I had to be courageous for you. I blinked. He was accurate. Now was my chance to stand up for him.

I promised him I would never let him down. "I have to return right away." getting worse.

We had decided to keep Erick in the dark about Emiel. We didn't desire

He worried so much about me that he let his health decline. I got to my feet to kiss him. he grabbed my hands and stopped me from kissing him on the cheek. "Remember what I told you, my little one; be brave enough to let go of the past. You will have a promising future if you do so. Keep it in mind because "mistakes seal your future." His words stunned me into silence, but he continued.

It wasn't completed yet. Although Erick may not be the most talkative individual,

He lugs a heavy load around on his shoulders. No man his age should have to carry these burdens.

Should communicate with him and resolve issues. A few misunderstandings between the two of you need to be resolved. "I..." It appeared that he knew in some way. He was fully informed and

He was accurate. Erick would be happy to explain, so I should give him a chance.

He wouldn't confess unless he knew I was willing to listen to him. Will speak with him.

Until tomorrow, Papa.

I gave him a cheek kiss before going to his room to say good night quietly.

But I didn't travel very far. I leaned against the door as soon as I did.

I stood against the door and took a few deep breaths.

"Are you going to then?"

As a shadow appeared in front of me, I almost screamed. Lightning quick.

"Oh my God! You guys need to stop doing that immediately! I peered.

He strolled down the hallway to make sure nobody had noticed his unexpected entrance.

"You

You are aware that there are security cameras all around us, correct?

He simply shook his shoulders and cocked his head to the side. His forehead was covered in stray brown hair. Burgers are taking up too much of the guards' time. Dinnertime is the reason I'm here to deliver you to your apartment. Your late departure is inappropriate.

"What are you now, bellboy for Erick?" Jordan, I can call a cab.

Well, since I'm already here," he said, gesturing toward the door. Should we?

As I took the initiative, I sighed and shook my head. Jordan stepped forward beside me. What did you earlier mean? What did I intend to do?

"Well, of course, speak with Erick."

My steps came to a complete halt. Did he also know?

"Relax. I only heard what your father said to you. It had a lovely, deep sound. He surrendered by raising his hands. Erick appeared to be under a lot of stress this week, too. I wanted to know if it was connected to what you said.

What your father instructed you to discuss with him

My knees shook with relief as I slowly exhaled. It's my dad.

It was devastating enough not to know. I might never be able to face the world again if anyone else found out. We continued strolling. When was that?

I was suddenly struck with a question.

Hello, Jordan. I queried. Why can't I see Justin, Nile, or any of them?

Are Erick's old friends still around? As we moved through the nursery, several.

My screams muffled my voice, but I asked the same question again after we were out of earshot.

Jordan had to begin to shiver. "You're unaware?"

You know what? Worried, I enquired. The almost empty parking lot served as an eerie backdrop for our conversation as we both stopped in front of Jordan's car.

They are all gone.

"What?"

The worst of my bullies was the Nile. Even Erick had to cross him.

Even after learning that they were all dead, they wouldn't cross. I wasn't a big fan, yes.

I was aware of them, but I couldn't say I was delighted to learn about them. "Yeah." Jordan opened the door on the passenger side and continued. For me. The person who killed them was Erick. I believe you would benefit from hearing the rest directly from him. Now, I felt like I needed to talk to

Erick.

I fastened my seatbelt as he approached the driver's side and entered the vehicle.

My safety belt So, do you want to eat dinner at my house or should we go straight home? If I could pick, I would go with the latter because my wife makes the best tuna casseroles ever.

I've already prepared dinner, but thanks for the offer. Wait,

Are you married? I inquired, perplexed. Although this was only the second, it was true.

Erick never revealed his marital status to me before I first met Jordan.

Didn't Erick tell you? "Yeah, for over fifteen months." When I

I gave a headshake. Jordan merely grinned. If I were single, would he let me get close to you? Sometimes Erick behaves like a vindictive caveman. You need to

He made a joke, "Beware of him.

"That's wise counsel. I'll let Erick know about it. When will you introduce me to your beautiful wife? There weren't many people there. Jordan is getting close to joining the group of people I now consider friends.

Merely at our second meeting. He was a lot of fun to be around.

And exuded a pleasant vibe. I enjoyed speaking with him. "Believe me; she's a devil!" He spoke, but his tone was one of affection.

Voice. At the wedding, you'll run into her. She is a member of your waiting staff. He started the car and drove away from the parking lot.

Most of the ride was spent in quiet comfort. I tried to process everything as I took the time to take in the day's events and the news I had heard. Erick's group of friends was close-knit. What must be done

For Erick to take such drastic action, something must have gone wrong. I was so addressed.

As soon as I arrived at my house, I called him.

Jordan pulled out from behind us as we were stopped at a red light.

He handed it to me after pulling something out of his pocket. Erick asked me to deliver that, lest I forget.

Oh, so you're Erick's delivery person now? I punned. What is this thing, you ask? I raised the tiny vial for a closer look. It appeared that there was some sort of item inside dark, blackish liquid.

"Erick's blood is in that. Before the wedding, he asks you to consume it for twenty-four hours. It contains enough for three days and is about ten milliliters.

It's for your safety while preparing for the wedding. He is useful. Let me explain anything you want to know but are hesitant to ask anyone.

Otherwise," I add.

Is vampire blood dark in color? I questioned because the vial's blood appeared to be black.

As the signal turned green, he replied, "No, it's deoxygenated." I

We moved forward toward my house after I put the vial in my purse.

Edward Erick

I went into the vampire stronghold's throne room.

My dad was attending a meeting.

Everyone in the room immediately stopped talking and bowed.

I took a deep breath as I moved toward my father, who was positioned in the middle of the room.

My mother by his side, I suppose. They were conversing with the nobles while holding blood goblets.

Greetings, my son! The room reverberated with my father's voice as

Each person got to their feet.

I appreciate being here, Father. When he motioned for me to stand up, I bowed before him.

"The feast tonight is in celebration of your upcoming nuptials." The

The kingdom anticipates the holy wedding and the accession of the next heir to the throne.

My dad informed me

Valory Stayton, my father, was the ruler of all vampires in this world.

Realm. Although he was over 400 years old, he only appeared ten years older because vampires age very slowly. "Real immortality" Although there was no faculty of vampires, our aging slowed once we were fully mature. Maturity. When that maturation period came, it varied from vampire to vampire. It was twenty-one for me because that was the year I

overcame Emiel to become the crown prince. My father appeared to be older than me because he had matured much later in life. He was, without a doubt, a great king. Our

Under his rule, the kingdom experienced great prosperity. My turn would come soon.

Through the night, the feast went on. At eleven o'clock at night, the

There were no signs of the festivities winding down and was still going strong. I had to welcome several visitors and engage them in conversation about the country's current political climate. I didn't

You have no idea how often I was forced to reject offers from women or say the same thing. All I wanted to do by the time it was 11:30 was go home.

Get a good night's sleep at home. Alina would hopefully still be awake. And I could call to see how she was doing. I had this sensation in my stomach.

I couldn't let that go until I heard her voice.

"How's the party going?" My mother arrived and joined me as I stood in a quiet spot far from the crowd.

Although it's nice, I'd prefer to return home and sleep. Who

Who knew ruling a country would be so challenging? And I'm still not even the king.

You'll grow accustomed to it. Mom gave my arm a comforting rub. "After a while, you'll realize that these gatherings are essential for our race to mix and expand its borders. When you become king, you'll throw celebrations all the time.

Tell Alina that, I say. I laughed. This brings up a good point:

I have to see how she is.

She asked sadly, "Are you worried about Emiel?"

Yes, I answered honestly. She may have a biological son named Emiel, but

He was a face she had never seen. Even though we shared a similar appearance, that reality

My mom had to deal with the death of one of her kids. What do you know? I'm

I'm leaving right now. Can you manage the remainder of the group?

She said a little smugly, "Been doing so for a year, son. "Now go. OH! I almost missed it. For the wedding, we have some very special guests.

"Really? Did they agree to it? My evening has significantly improved. "Yes." My mother chuckled as the light from the candles illuminated her green ballgown. "Now go!"

"Bye."

ERICK!

A telepathic scream sent me to my knees as I was about to leave the house. As soon as I heard the voice again after the initial

The shock has subsided.

Alina was there.

Chapter 21

Alina

I slowly opened my eyes when I felt cool hands touch my forehead. My

I awoke in a dimly lit room I had never been to before as my eyes fluttered open. before

A recognizable voice said, "Sorry, did I wake you up?"

When I turned to my right, Erick was seated in a chair beside the bed.

I shook my head only when my throat became too dry and itchy.

I sat up against the headboard, taking in the scene with Erick's assistance. I was in a sizable space painted sky blue in the low light. Even though there were no lights, the room was warmly lit by numerous candles in each corner. I was aware of the brisk sea breeze and the

Because I could hear the sound of the waves crashing on the beach, I assumed we were there.

Near the water. Two sizable windows were open and had drawn curtains to

The candlelights occasionally flickered as the wind blew in, but it didn't go out. It was pretty dark outside, probably one in the morning, as I could see. The king-sized bed I was in had incredibly plush covers. And soft pillows and a mattress. In conclusion, this was not my room.

Where am I? I hoarsely questioned him.

He immediately extended a cup to me so I could drink. the well-known

As soon as I smelled it, the perfume of chocolate filled my nostrils. I hesitate and

He removed the still-warm cup while avoiding skin-to-skin contact and noticed

The cup contained whipped cream and hot chocolate. Right away, I took

The divine flavor almost knocked me out as soon as I took a sip.

Moan. Compared to all the coffee I had been consuming, it felt good.

You are in my beachfront home. I couldn't take it without being at risk. Your home.

It takes too much time. Since my house is closer, I brought you here. How are you? He inquired, "How are you feeling?" with obvious concern in his voice. I cautiously replied, "I'm fine," and sipped more of my hot cocoa. Chocolate. In actuality, though, I was too exhausted to be around him and on guard. What was I supposed to do when a vampire was nearby? He would only do so whether he was weak.

To defeat me, he would only need to exert a small portion of his strength. He rubbed his eyes in exhaustion and sighed. "Look, I'm truly sorry for what happened, but I can't go back in time and undo everything." Therefore, stop appearing so helpless whenever I approach you. I won't do that.

Damn it. I'll eat you alive.

Despite being frustrated, he spoke in a soft tone.

I have to get home. I have an early morning appointment with Papa. And... Weight... Who changed me tomorrow?" I questioned, shocked to see myself in boxers and an oversized t-shirt.

He replied, "I did," in a tone that forbade further discussion. "As for

The following day, he can meet your father. I had you examined by a physician.

He also advised bed rest. Due to your malnutrition, you are too frail. His

His voice was flat, but I could tell he thought as his eyes were narrowed toward me.

I got spanked for misbehaving.

"What?" I asked groggily. I didn't require him to lecture me about my health. I suppose I lost my appetite because of him. He handed me a prescription while shaking his head and saying, "Never mind." I asked him with an arched brow. It's not a poison; it's a vitamin tablet. Tomorrow we need to discuss many things, but for now, you.

He said, "I need to rest," and grinned.

I ingested the medication along with my hot chocolate. I gave him the cup back. I unexpectedly felt at ease in his presence today. When the worst I could have feared was another loss of appetite.

Perhaps I was simply too exhausted right now to feel angry or afraid.

He put me back to sleep after putting out the lights in the room.

Thus, they lit each candle individually, leaving only a few of them glowing, creating.

There was hardly any light in the space.

Why are there candles? You don't have electricity here, do you? I requested help. My eyelids began to thicken. Why the hot chocolate, you ask? Soup would have been my expectation. Though I wasn't moaning. I was confident that I wouldn't

The soup has successfully passed my throat.

Oh, there is electricity, but I like candles better. He made a shrug.

Due to your nausea, I cannot give you any solid food tonight, but the doctor advised me to prepare a nutritious breakfast for you the following morning. So, the choice was between blood and hot chocolate. He grinned. He stood at the doorway and asked, "Are you hungry, though?"

I replied, "Surprisingly, that hot chocolate took care of it, honestly, as I experienced another closing of my eyes.

Sleep soundly. If you need anything, I'll be right next door. He wished "Alina" good night and softly closed the door behind him. That was the last sound I heard before being enveloped in darkness for the second time today.

Chapter 22

No, Alina Kendrick, it won't stop! Too much blood is present!" I yelled.

squeezing the wound more forcefully to check the blood flow

"Kendrick, tell me what to do!"

"Maintain your composure, Alina. A vampire, he is. Soon, the healing will begin." Kendrick reassured me while accelerating as quickly as possible. Because only one of us could use compulsion at the time, and he wasn't conscious. The traffic police were following us. Fortunately, he was still alive.

I once more turned to face Erick. He was sleeping in the vehicle's backseat.

My hands were on his chest as I put his head on my lap to staunch the bleeding. He wasn't conscious when I found him, and he still isn't, except when Kendrick yanked the stake out of his chest and called my name. Well, that was another vampire myth that was disproven.

I could still clearly recall how I came across him as he lay in a pool of his blood.

Just outside my front door. I'm not sure how, but I just did, know that it was Erick and not Emiel. My brain completely went blank for a brief period. My body went numb until I noticed a tiny movement in his fingers as they lay on the wet tiles.

I hurried over and attempted to pull the stake out, but it was firmly embedded in the bones and muscles that had begun to sprout above it. My grip was shaky as well. So, after forcing myself to calm down, I realized something.

To inspect Kendrick, my father and I were there.

When I couldn't find my purse anywhere I went, I took Erick's phone out of his pants pocket and told him to haul ass as quickly as he could. He had a good idea of what he was missing from my tone of voice and the blue stream I was using. He had a sizable team with him.

Before the other occupants of my apartment awoke, I had to tidy up the mess.

He then used only his hands to pull the stake out.

My thoughts were abruptly interrupted when the car stopped. I could see Erick's two-story beach house from the car's windshield.

The spare keys were thrown to me by Kendrick after he opened the back door and got out of the driver's seat. I'll get him inside. "Alina, open the door." After removing my bloody hands from his chest, I picked up the keys and nodded. I moved his head slowly from my lap to the seat and unlocked the door after getting out of the car. I was covered in blood by Erick. My hair was clinging to me like a second skin, and my dress was wet from head to toe.

I quickly opened the door after unlocking it so Kendrick could enter, carrying Erick in his arms.

I turned on the light and inserted the key into the holder by the door.

As Kendrick climbed the stairs to Erick's room on the first floor, all the lights in the house went out. I followed behind and then closed and locked the front door. I then. I walked into the room just as Kendrick placed him on the bed. Erick's

As Kendrick stood up, the dead weight caused him to stumble slightly. 'W-what now?' When I arrived to stand by him, I questioned. "Do vampires require medical care? Do they even

have pharmaceuticals?" Kendrick gave a headshake. He ought to have begun healing but hasn't eaten in a while. He currently only needs blood as medicine."

Why then didn't you tell me that sooner? I've previously yelled at him. He pushed him aside and sat down next to Erick on the bed. "Knife, knife! Obtain a knife for me!" I jumbled my words together out of fear. Never before had I felt this fear before my father was admitted to the hospital after unsuccessful treatment.

You're not required to do this, Alina. You're shaking. I'll track one down for you, Kendrick." I was happy that this time, my voice didn't stutter.

But this time, it was like having icy fingers squeezing my heart.

Without another grumble, Kendrick whipped out a massive ass.

He removed the evilly gleaming dagger from its sheath and held it in his hand. Blade and presented it to me.

I grabbed it from him without thinking and started to make a small

I cut my wrist while stifling a sudden burn. Once I had handed the knife to Erick, I held my hand over his and used my other hand to pry them apart.

Returning to Kendrick. The coldness of his body almost made me shiver, but I knew he

He was still alive. Even before Kendrick got here, I already knew. At first, there was no movement. Simply put, my blood hit his lips. I held his lips open as they flowed inside his mouth. Even some of it rolled down his neck and splashed on his face. But it didn't last long.

Before, I could feel my blood thinning and eventually stopping.

"Kendrick?"

He said, "You have vampire blood in your blood." Of course! Jordan claimed that his blood would still impact the wedding day. Then, in addition to the mental connection lasting, the physical connection was also healing.

Erick's strangled gasp diverted both of our attention from him, and I was about to take the dagger back from Kendrick to slit my arm once more.

"Erick!" Together, Kendrick and I said.

His eyes flashed open with that internal electric blue light, and they met mine immediately. Although I could see his fangs growing longer inside his mouth,

He didn't try to stab me or draw blood from me. Get me some new clothes, scissors, a first aid kit, and some buckets of water, Kendrick, "I spoke while keeping my eyes fixed on Erick. I was so relieved that I thought I might faint, but when I saw.

He started to close his eyes again, and I froze.

"Erick!" I gently shook his shoulders while attempting to contain my blood loss. The bed sheets were completely wet at this point. Why else would he be so frail?

Soon after, Kendrick returned to the space and arranged everything I

I asked him to sit down next to me on the floor. Afterward, he went and stood on the

As silent support on the other side of the bed, he would have come immediately if I had only.

I was unable to manage it.

Can you sit up, Erick? He asked me as he cast me a half-lidded look. I knew that it had to be awful for him and that he must suffer greatly.

While I was in excruciating pain, blood was all over the place. He needed a little cleaning, or it.

Later on, it would be very challenging to remove all of the dried blood.

With his hands on the bed, Erick pushed himself up and gave a feeble nod, but

I stumbled forward about halfway. I snatched him up and put my arms around his

However, it only caused more blood to splatter and ooze out of his chest.

My palm. I turned my head sideways, and Erick let out a weak groan.

He eventually had to stop staring at the gaping wound, so he carefully sat up.

I placed pillows at his back, and against them,

Since removing his shirt wasn't an option, I cut the entire thing off him using scissors. I once more struggled to control my gag reflex when I saw the enormous hole in his chest. Erick was sleeping with his eyes closed. Although the body was limp, I could tell he was awake. I had to get going because he needed to sleep.

I soaked the towels in water and properly cleaned him up.

To allow his chest to heal naturally, he bandaged it. After that, I carefully moved him without moving the bed's sheets or pillows.

I brought fresh couch pillows.

I told Kendrick to put the bloody clothes in the trash and leave us alone. Until Erick's parents arrived by themselves. When Erick refused to bite, I held my bloodied wrist in front of his and threatened to use Kendrick's dagger as I laid him down on the pillows with the covers pulled over him. On my hand once more to entice him to sip. I didn't experience any pain this time. In addition to the feeling of his fangs piercing my skin. Only able to drink, Erick. He took three to four gulps and then pushed my hand away as he dozed off.

Cures it.

I checked on him to ensure he was alright, then quickly washed the blood off in the ensuite bathroom before changing into Erick's shorts and a huge white t-shirt. When I exited the shower, he was awake. "Erick? Do you require anything? Do you feel pain?" I immediately ran to his side.

"Why?" Erick asked, barely raising his voice above a whisper. "Why d-did

Can you donate your blood to me?"

"Shuh... not now. Retire to bed, please." I tried to soothe him by running my fingers through his hair. It wouldn't take long, given how pale he was. Okay, let's talk tomorrow. I swear. Return to your bed."

Erick remained silent. His eyelids fell from those lovely I didn't believe I would ever see those eyes until today. Nothing could have ever felt worse than that, to reiterate. I pulled the covers up to his chest as tears clouded my vision. I close my eyes to block them out. Weeping at this moment was inappropriate.

"Erick, Alina! At that precise moment, Kenna entered the room through the door. She wasn't in the excellent shape I was used to seeing her in; instead, she was visibly terrified for the first time in my life. Oh my gosh! Her skirt flew around her as she moved quickly over to the bed.

With vampire quickness to take a seat on Erick's opposite side. He was still numb from the cold.

However, the blood stopped flowing as the healing process finally began.

"What took place? He rushed out of the feast he was attending with his father.

And at this point, my goodness! Why won't you wake up, Erick, baby?"

I clenched my hands to stop reaching out to her because of her sobs.

Back to Erick. This constant urge I had to touch him on the skin was

On the other hand, I curled my fingers into my palm and focused because this drove me crazy.

On answering her. "Emiel." When I got home, he was there to meet me. He

He massacred each guard. I asked Erick for assistance before I passed out.

I fell asleep and then awoke outside of my building. I climbed the stairs.

Erick was found with a stake through his heart."

"I see." Kenna spent considerable time staring at Erick while occasionally wiping tears from her eyes. She then pushed away while lifting her hands.

just a few hairs from his brow

I was about to turn around and leave the room to give them some privacy.

Quickly rising to her feet, Kenna produced a tiny vial that looked much like the one Jordan had given me—the only difference was that the liquid inside was fluorescent green.

She tore the bandages with her clawed finger, using one hand. And threw the fluid right into his wound.

As the liquid seeped into his flesh like water on stone, I watched in wide-eyed fascination.

Erick jerked his entire body upward. I contain a scream as

His skin started to knead together as soon as he moved instinctively closer. His chest was restored to full health in a matter of seconds. And completely free of blemishes.

"It's recovered," I was still unable to believe what had happened. Was it genuine?

"If you will call it medicine, that was."

It expedites recovery, but

He will have to do this for a few days and feed twice as much as usual.

Days or he'll deteriorate. If not, he ought to be alright by tomorrow."

Kenna ran her fingers through her son's hair before returning.

He got to his feet and faced me. "Alina, would you kindly stay with him?" I'd be concerned.

If you do, a little less."

I'll do it, but how about you? Why don't you stay here with him?" She gave a headshake. I have to leave. I have obligations as a queen. We're attempting to determine the total number of people who visited your apartment.

Or if anyone in the area witnessed anything. The humans won't be harmed, but we must remove any evidence they may have witnessed."

"I get it," you say. I genuinely did. Although Kenna may not have liked people,

However, she adored her son and would sacrifice anything for him.

Exactly like me.

Chapter 23

Erick

Each breath hurt.

I felt I was back in that hell hole with even the slightest movement.

Attempting to rescue Alina while fighting to prevent Emiel from killing him. Me.

"Ugh." My eyes were very difficult to open. Light coming from the

The space felt dark. I groaned as I closed them once more. Why do I feel so weak, God?

"Erick?" Was that Alina? Had she arrived? She had a worried voice. It might not be in enemy hands.

"I—" My throat had the sensation of having been scrubbed with sandpaper.

"Hold on. I'll go get a drink." As she stood up, I felt the bed slouch. She had been standing right beside me.

"Here." Although she didn't touch me, the glass was close to my face. I barely opened my mouth, and the cool liquid gushed down my throat as a reward. I eagerly gulped it down.

My throat felt normal once more, and I exhaled a sigh, but the thirst persisted.

I remained there, lusting after the much denser liquid that provided me with life. "Do you require anything more?" "Blood?" Alina enquired. "Still in fear.

I'm all right. I told a lie and managed to open my eyes. Then I had

I enjoyed seeing her face right in front of me. This morning, Alina was covered in blood. "The memory had plagued my dreams as I struggled to awaken and find relief from her discomfort. Ultimately, it

Fighting was futile. My body stopped functioning so I could save energy.

Her stunning green eyes began to well up with tears. "It wasn't mine, no. "I am fine. It was ingrained in you." Her tone was husky.

"Good. I'm happy." I turned to my side while trying to contain another groan. Alina could then sit next to me. She still hadn't sat down, so I raised an eyebrow at her.

What is the issue?

I'm truly sorry. Her lower lip was quivering, so she bit it."I

I ought to have realized it was a trap. You were hurt as a result of"

"Alina, no. He hurt me, so I got hurt. "I gave her a firm reply. "Emiel"

He will do whatever it takes to take the throne because he wants it so badly.

I get it. Neither you nor I could have prevented him.

She merely nodded before settling next to me. I desired to

I was able to clutch her in my arms tightly, but just as I turned to pull her toward me,

I took note of our situation.

I pointed to the bed and said, "I think we need to wash up." She made a.

Although they did a great job cleaning me up, my body still had a lot of blood from the wounds that had already fully recovered. The blood had stained the clothes she changed into after seeping through the mattress. she was sitting on the bed next to me last night. Blood specks had dried on me as well.

Alina stood up from the bed after giving a head nod. Don't leave just yet. Is

Kenneth here?"

"Yes, he is down there. Call him I will." I signaled for Alina to go to

I took advantage of the opportunity to get up and put on a shirt when he opened the door to call for Ken.

"Erick!" A second later, I heard Ken's worried voice, and I discovered

He had me in the palm of his hands. Stupid Erick! Never, ever, ever do that to us.

again!"

"Sorry." My lips began to twitch into a smile. I had known Kendrick for a very long time. Although he was only ten years older than me, he was

My young child's playmate What number did we lose? I queried solemnly as we parted ways.

Kendrick's face grew gloomier. "Five. The men are all dead and mutilated. Mia was stressed after losing an arm, which caused her to pass out.

She'll be fine, though. Her arm is also getting better."

It will grow back, Ken, in a few weeks. Not to worry. I assured Kendrick and Mia that they were a couple. He must have been dying from it. To remain here by my side. Have the fresh guards yet to show up? Then Allen?" "They were instructed to respect your privacy so long as they don't perceive any threats, and the new guards are posted directly outside the house. As soon as Alina entered the room holding a bottle of blood, I looked up. Kendrick went on: "Allen is unharmed. Security disturbances didn't occur at the hospital, but I added some extra security just in case.

case."

I blinked. "Regards, Ken. You may now enter your room. I'm good.

Just have the mattress changed by someone else before you proceed." "Sure." Ken nodded and then walked out the door.

"Here." Alina raised the bottle. I was ungrateful as a young child.

I grabbed the bottle from her grasp and drank everything in a few gulps. As

It was unappealing and devoid of nutrition, as usual. It was in no way like the wealthy.

The delightful blood coursing through Alina's veins

"Take a shower now. I'll make something special for you "she remarked, and

I reached for the bottle I was holding, but instead, I placed it on the nightstand.

"What?"

"You and I, Alina, are taking a shower." I had had it with being the nice guy who knew how to handle such circumstances. I had no desire to let her go.

Alina

Erick reached out and took my hand, dragging me into the restroom. I ought to have resisted, but I wasn't inclined to.

He froze the glass by turning the shower on to a scorching temperature.

Both the mirror and the enclosure. He unbuckled his belt, took off his shirt, and tossed it into the laundry basket before continuing.

His steel-gray dress pants' zipper was pulled down. He looked at me, and I

As I stood there, I moved my head to the side to avoid being transfixed by the counter.

I'm giving him a closer look. Watching him had a sensual quality to it. If I kept staring at him, I didn't think I would be able to restrain myself from reaching out. Something else hitting the laundry can be heard.

Even as a low gasp came out of my mouth, the basket had my flushing. "Look all you want, Alina. I'm not entirely naked." His voice was audible to me immediately.

I looked up at him and cried out louder this time. He instinctively raised his hands to rest them on his exposed chest. The blue in his eyes caught my attention as I looked up at him. His forehead was resting against mine.

Moreover, I was pushed up against a wall by his advancing hands. He said, "Now it's your turn."

I shuddered as it was whispered in my ears.

"I..." How could I possibly claim that I felt uneasy around me? Are you exposed in front of anyone?

It's alright. The top may be left on. "Moving away from me, he urged.

I recalled that I still wore my underwear underneath the clothes.

I kept the top and pants on while slowly removing the shorts. I did the. I threw my shorts in the hamper and turned to face Erick again. I'm cheeks

He groaned, and I heard it.

My back was up against the watery wall the next thing I knew.

Cascading down both of our bodies from the shower. Erick held me. On either side of my head against the wall. We held hands, and he gave me a rough kiss that was a first for him. Though it

I wasn't being hurt by it. I was giving him a rough kiss in return.

I pulled on his bottom lip and let go with a wet sound. Edward Erick

He retaliated by biting my lower lip with his fangs. He took advantage of my gasp and stuck his tongue inside my mouth to taste every crevice.

He moved away from my lips and sucked and moved down my neck.

He was scraping tender skin with his fangs. I closed my eyes and surrendered, feeling my heart beat like a drum against my chest. I turned my head to the side, felt him move to the top of my breasts, and gasped. I can see through my shirt's wet material. I kiss the valley between my breasts. He suddenly fell silent, and the shower's scalding hot water felt like blocks of ice.

When I opened my eyes to see his face, I noticed that he gave me a very serious look. I lowered my eyes once more as a result of his intense gaze. "I'm

He immediately turned away from me after saying, "I'm sorry." "I didn't want to push it.

I'm on you once more."

He had the wrong idea entirely. "No! It's not like that, Erick!" So why won't you turn to face me? His gaze was filled with unrestrained curiosity.

"I—I am unable."

How come not? He approached me again measuredly and carefully, placing his hands on my shoulders. I'll assume you don't know why if you don't tell me."

"Because I keep thinking I'm to blame for everything every time I look at you! You were hurt as a result of me!" As my vision dimmed, I yelled. Clouded.

His eyes widened as I struggled to free myself and avoid further humiliation. But he wouldn't let me leave. Rather, he made me look at him by tightening his hold on my arm. Then he inquired

I wasn't prepared to respond to that particular query.

Why do you care, Alina?

I turned away again, unable to respond even though I didn't want to. He was accurate. Why was he important to me? Why did I think it was bad for him to get hurt? Am I to blame? I should be happy that we are even at this point. He injured me, and as a result, he was injured again. Erick's lifeless face then suddenly appeared before my eyes. There was so much blood that I thought I might never see him again for a brief moment. My heart broke into tens of millions of pieces when I realized that.

Because I care, I replied simply.

I had feelings for Erick. The fact that he always put me first was significant to me.

Time. Knowing that it was dangerous, he wouldn't have rescued me if he hadn't.

A trap, that was. But because of me, he came and was hurt. I was a major flaw. He simply continued donning his armor. He never stopped trying to save me. I suddenly realized that he would continue doing the same for me.

Because he was also concerned for me.

Chapter 24

Still unfinished was Alina Erick.

"Alina, explain to me why you care." He made a prepared, dead serious sound.

To strip my defense of all its layers. You've kept so much inside for such a long time. Release it. Please explain why you care. Please explain your willingness to forgive. After all that I have done to you? Damn it, tell me!"

It felt as though a floodgate had been opened.

"Even hate is not something I want to feel toward you. What did you do to me, exactly? I'm not referring to my virginity here; there is absolutely no amount of punishment that can ever make up for what I lost." At each word, his face turned pale.

I said. "You restricted my ability to make decisions and, at one point, even my desire to survive."

He said, "Don't stop," but I didn't listen. I hadn't finished yet. He asked for the truth, so I'll give it to him.

I continued to live because my father required me to. All he had was me.

Left. Do you know how many times I've attempted suicide? How

How many times did I just barely survive? I believed the suffering would never end, but

Then, everything started to come together again. I was recovering, and so were you.

Papa. I then abruptly learned that my Papa had limited time left. I

I also dealt with that. Then you had to re-enter my life and rip me apart. Each wound was shredded to pieces. My entire defense system collapsed on me.

once more!" I didn't yell. I could hardly speak above a whisper, but I was certain that he could hear me. He continued to stand motionless in front of me.

And absorbing everything. He remained silent while taking the verbal abuse.

Because of how different we were now, we did not blink. That time had ended.

It is directly in the back of us.

"Although I didn't request any of this, I accepted everything that happened to me, believing it to be fate. I consented to marry you since it. It was my mother's final request, but it's no longer about her. It concerns us. Moreover, I took too long to understand that. All those people passed away today.

Owing to me! I almost missed you, you! How did I allow that to happen?

"What happened?"

I screamed, grabbing my hair and tumbling to the ground.

My body shook with sobs as I continued to rock back and forth when

He gently pulled my hands away from my hair, and I felt it." the origins.

He whispered, "It will start bleeding," and lightly ran his hands over my scalp.

Times to ease the discomfort, "You're mistaken. I was the one who was in charge of

This is what I'm doing to you. I ought to have been more in charge. I should have

Emiel had nothing to contend with. Hit me if that helps you. Everything is on me. You'll have no trouble finding the courage to take the plunge." He was intentionally being funny when he spoke.

"No!" As soon as I said. I would rather bang my knuckles against a wall to avoid hurting him.

He was lying outside of me in a pool of his blood.

My memory of my apartment door was permanently etched there, never to leave. It never stopped showing me how close I had been. Losing him. I realized that my feelings for Erick were changing as I stood there. Nothing was easy or comprehensible anymore. How can they dupe someone?

Rapists? However, there was one thing I was certain of if Erick had been there, he would never have done that.

Since he returned to my life, he has worked extremely hard to earn my trust. Even though I resisted him, I knew everyone appeared to be the same. But no matter what I did, the guilt remained.

Mei knew Erick was hurt because of his excessive concern for my security.

It was constantly gnawing at me.

"I apologise."

Don't ever apologize, I say! I was surprised to hear the restrained rage in his voice as I looked up at him. "Decide, damn it! Either you detest me or care about me for the rest of your life. Please don't turn bipolar on me!" His

Gritted teeth were used to speak the quiet words. Though he didn't yell,

But his words made me feel like my heart was being crushed. I knew

But he did it on purpose to absolve himself of responsibility. He turned the shower off as he stood up and moved away from me. We were both now completely soaked and free of any remaining blood. "I'm going out. You can alter it after I leave. He started to depart from

He reached out to touch me, but I grabbed his hand and halted him. "Don't." I could only whisper in a hoarse voice. Lord, he was correct. I sounded like a pitiful bipolar person who was torn between loving, hating, and despising him.

Love?

Where did that idea originate? I dropped and took his hand away, feeling like I had been burned because I was so startled. I looked up and noticed Erick's electric blue eyes narrow at my sudden motion, so I got up from where I was. on the ground and then got up to face him. We locked eyes and held each other's gaze. The physical contact was just as hot as his touch. The side of his face, his cheeks, the thick column of his throat, and his now-unharmed chest were all touched by my hand as it raised itself on its own. He had flawless skin that was free of any marks. He appeared more untamed thanks to the light stubble. He has undergone significant change in the past.

Up until now, I hadn't noticed any changes. Erick, I wasn't the Erick I grew up with. He wasn't the one transitioning anymore between a young boy and a drunken man who came to me one terrible night.

This man was distinctive. He had typical eye shadows that people have.

When they have seen and learned too much. I am now aware of the reality. I comprehended what my father had tried to explain and what Emiel had said to me.

Why doesn't it work on you when Erick couldn't escape it? Nonsense! Every time, my compulsion succeeds! I mean, even vampires can't get away from me! When I instructed Erick to hurt, even he couldn't avoid it.

You on that night! It nearly succeeded! Almost!

Before he said that, I was unaware I was carelessly tracing my fingers across his.

He opened his mouth and used his teeth to grab my middle and index fingers.

He touched the tips with his tongue, causing me to experience the sensation in places I

Never before have I felt.

He closed his eyes, became instantly very still, and took a deep breath. The blue was on fire when he reopened them. Knowing that his vampire sense was at maximum alert caused my breath to catch in the moment.

He didn't allow me many opportunities to take in his magnificence. I learned

One of his hands was behind my head as I leaned against the wall.

To draw me nearer to him, the other slid around my waist. When that happened,

With the rage of an untamable beast, my lips pressed against mine.

He gave me a powerful kiss that forced me to give in to the heat.

I asked for more. The man he was knew everything about his goals and how to achieve them. Not even the kiss we had just a few minutes earlier was similar to this one. No way! Those were gentle and subdued.

Compared to the way he kissed me right then. He was separating my lips. So he could stick his tongue inside my mouth and ruthlessly explore it.

I struggled to control his tongue but failed. And then, suddenly,

He backed away once it had begun, but he held onto me nonetheless. He instead touched my forehead with his. We were both breathing rapidly in short bursts. In our hearts

We rubbed our ribs against a tattoo.

I just said you were bipolar. He laughed without mirth. "How come I

With you around, I never have any self-control.

I said, "I didn't want to feel anything for you.

Even with all the intense feelings racing through my head

"But I," I thought as a new wave of tears began to sting my eyes. It was much stronger between us than I had anticipated, and I gave up the fight.

It.

"I know." After some time, he released our embrace, only for him to pick me up.

He took hold of my right hand and began to trace the barely visible white lines on my wrist.

Over time, the blade's marks had vanished, but the extremely thin, white.

The lines were still there. But that was a long time ago, immediately following Papa's diagnosis. Cutting provided me with a means of escape because I hadn't exactly been mentally stable; the pain made me forget everything else. But when Papa returned home, I stopped. I had to be tough for him. For him, I needed to be strong.

My eyes widened at the startling insight. "Vampire blood is a healer."

"You can pull back from the edge and fasten the belt with a drop or two.

"Only slightly healing, so you wouldn't see the abnormalities." He didn't look away from my wrist at all.

"When?"

"Whenever I went to see Alan,"

Then why?

I care because.

"Erick!" I tightened my grip on him by wrapping my arms around his neck. He had only ever hurt me before, so why would he hurt me that one night?

Would you continue to defend me? He insisted on telling me repeatedly that any justifications for hurting me would only be pretexts. He never revealed the truth to me. He constantly blamed himself for things that weren't his fault, not because I wouldn't listen to him.

He shared the same victim status and sense of helplessness that I did.

As relief filled my veins and made my limbs go jelly, I sighed. We

We could get through this. I believed in us. We would succeed as a team.

After a while, he said, "We need to dry up, or you'll catch a cold.

He wrapped his arm around my shoulders and put it under my knees. Nods a little

My head was on his chest. As he lifted me off the ground and into his arms safely to carry me to the counter, my arms went around his shoulders.

He opened the closed door and hung up a bathrobe. Then

He removed his wet underwear and threw it into the hamper as well.

All the while looking at me and completely ignoring my blush. He left and came over, standing in between my legs. My face turned beetroot red as I searched my eyes for approval. He grabbed the shirt and tore it down the middle; I didn't protest.

After being abandoned, I wanted to cover my chest with my hands.

When I changed into Erick's clothes this morning, I removed my bra but did not move. When I felt Erick slowly pull my underwear down, leaving me completely exposed and vulnerable, I didn't even object. It was all due to

Erick never looked away from me, not even when he shifted his gaze back to

I'll place my clothing in the basket and get a few towels.

I did, however, respond when he put his hands on my waist and

Just below my breasts, it trailed up and came to rest. I gasped as my nipples began to tingle.

Erick kissed the curve of my shoulder and the column of my throat, sending a pool of hotter, wetter heat between my legs. I unconsciously clenched my hands into fists on the counter and closed my eyes, but I didn't feel repulsed. I wanted him to keep going, though. His presence was seductive. Erick stopped, which disappointed me. He gave me one last kiss while burying his face in the crook of my neck. Then he wrapped a towel around my body.

He said, "Thank you," before stepping away from me and putting a second towel over my head.

"What for?" I questioned while comforting him by resting my hand on his chest.

I needed to be reminded that he was there.

"For believing in me." He grinned a little as my face began to heat up. "Is

Is your body okay?"

Why did he suddenly ask me such a humiliating question? Suddenly? And why did I feel the need to respond? I'm alright, just a little. I firmly closed my mouth. The thought that I was about to say "aroused" shocked me.

This time, Erick's laughter was genuine and open, making me flush. Harder. Oh, leave already! I lost it.

"Fine. Sorry." He had not stopped laughing as he left the restroom. It

It wasn't until then that I understood how Erick had managed to make me forget.

The massacre I witnessed last night.

I discovered a nicely folded dress as I tried to stop thinking about it, along with brand-new pants on one side of the counter. I quickly dried off and got dressed after thinking he might have asked someone to buy them.

When I left, the bed had a fresh mattress, and Erick He had changed into a pair of loose-fitting white sweatpants. He even prepared my dinner. We dined in quiet while enjoying the silence. I was finally free after a long period of nightmares in my mind for the first time. Despite the sights

It is now easier to bear because the things I saw were deeply ingrained in my memory.

I became aware that the nature of my relationship with Erick had changed. We finished our dinner and were lying next to each other when he said, "Sleep." laying in bed. Right here, I am. You've endured a lot since last time. "On your wedding day, I don't want you to appear zombie-like.

He tightly pulled the covers over us, encircling me in his arms.

I nodded, losing all energy immediately and falling asleep almost instantly. I didn't miss it, not even in my sleep-drunk mind.

The day after tomorrow... was the day of my wedding, according to Erick.

Chapter 25

When I awoke the following morning, Alina Erick was right beside me. While the other was draped over me, one of his arms was folded beneath his pillow.

He was sound asleep when my hand was placed over his. His blonde locks

Fell onto his forehead and swayed a little in the incoming sea breeze via the sizable open windows. He did not appear calm or normal at all.

Like the cruel and arrogant vampire prince,

Keeping my hand still to prevent waking him, I ran the

My other hand's fingers combed through his supple hair. As soon as I learned about the diamond had broken into hundreds of pieces when the early morning sunlight hit it. My rings for marriage!

Why, Alina, doesn't it work for you? Erick was unable to escape it.

Why then does it not apply to you?

The justification for resisting Emiel's demands became clear all of a sudden.

Clear. In particular, Erick had given me his great-grandmother's ring to help me resist compulsion and any mental attempts to get in touch with me. It must have been extremely powerful unless I was infused with that specific vampire's blood to negate even Emiel's abilities.

I turned to face Erick again, who had already opened his eyes. to the sky.

Though hazy from the sun, his iris reminded me of a serene, soothing ocean. Sleep. I used to believe that he always did it because it had become his second nature. He seemed to be trying to predict when I would start having tantrums once more, in my opinion. I couldn't fault him. "That night bothered me for so long.

Even when I hated him, I was never able to resist him. It was impossible to ignore the attraction between us.

I took my hands off his hair and said, "Good morning.

My right hand was now lying on his lower back and tightly wrapped around his body as my body shifted closer to his. His eyes grew wider. He then pulled me even closer by squeezing my waist even harder. I nearly got slammed into his chest.

He stroked his hand along my spine while whispering "Morning" in my ear. That was my Erick, then. He will take a mile when you give him an inch.

I was too exhausted from last night to be opposed to the

Although I was still lying in the same bed with him, I could now feel the flush rising on my face.

He sprang up from the couch just as quickly as he had me in his arms. Bed. He sat down with his back to me, his legs firmly planted.

"Erick?" His sudden movement startled me, and I questioned.

You're blushing, I see. Gritted teeth allowed it to come out.

Blushing. What does this mean, though?

Would you like for me to bring you another bottle? You will need to feed more frequently than usual, Kenna did say. I also sat up.

He gave a headshake. No, other blood feels sufficiently satisfying.

"What?"

You're blood. With his hands in front of him, he hunched forward. When you attempted to wake me up, "You gave me your blood." Even a single drop of your blood acts as a drug to me. It's the reason I used to eat so frequently from you when we were younger.

But in college, you stopped consuming me. I snuck up behind him until I sat directly behind him, even though I knew I was pushing his limits.

"When that moment came, I was capable and had better self-control." I

Thought I could better resist, but as soon as I tasted your blood once more, I

I was out of drink options. They all felt malnourished and tasteless. His shoulders began to tremble. "Alina, I need some time to collect myself.

"Slow down.

Or you can feed off of me, which was a polite way of saying, "Get the fuck out before I drain you dry." I extended my hand and set it on his shoulders.

"What?" He peered over his shoulder at me with the same brightness that appears when he enters vampire mode. His

His expression on his face revealed that he thought I was crazy.

You're welcome to eat from me, it's fine.

I had no idea where I was.

I didn't know where I got my courage, but I was adamant about making things right. When there

I wanted to make new joyful memories because I already had too many painful ones.

One, just like this morning when I awoke in his arms. "How much do you charge?"

He turned hesitantly to face me and held out his hand.

I offered him my hand, and he took it.

"Yes."

He gazed at me for several minutes before nodding. Just a little bit for the time being. After that, I can drink the bottles. I quickly straddled him and turned to face the open balcony doors. Erick was kissing my neck, and his arms were around my waist.

When his fangs pierced my skin, fire erupted through my veins, but

It wasn't painful. It wasn't even close. I jumped at the first draw. It seems entirely uncharted and unfamiliar. This was different from when he drank it from me in my office. This was

much more intense and vivid. Words could not adequately express it. I gasped, my eyes automatically closed, and my back ached so severely that my breasts were crushed.

To his torso.

Erick held me in place by moving an arm to the arch of my back.

While he dug his fangs in further, the sudden pain made me wince, but it quickly subsided.

I sensed a heated pool before I realized an intense pleasure had replaced it.

Among my legs.

I then fell onto Erick's back as he withdrew and held me close.

Our breathing was labored.

"Are you okay?" There was no concern in his hoarse voice, which was almost growling.

"Yes." No way! My insides were on fire, and my body was limp.

I only realized he was laughing when I heard it in my ear.

He had a perfect hearing for my innermost thoughts. Not only had I drank his blood, but

He took two drinks from me. That indicated that our mental route was clear. I

Due to how strongly I was blushing, I thought I might melt away.

Erick grinned. This time, his chest shook as a result of the noise. "If it helps, others could benefit from a cold besides you.

shower."

"Be quiet!" I gave a halfhearted reprimand.

Before moving me to lie on the pillows, he gave me a gentle squeeze. He again turned away from me and faced the balcony. I observed him remaining silent for a considerable amount of time. I was unable to sense the mental bond in any way. Since I hadn't read his thoughts until this point, he must have been able to control the bond on his side. When he started talking, I was about to ask him how I could break the bond on my side. His

He had gravel in his voice when he spoke.

After the party at the palace that evening, Justin, Keith, Nile, Jacob, and I went clubbing. Before I left to begin my training to become king, we decided to hit a while we were having fun. I knew it was a trap, though. The Nile and the others traded their lives to Emiel for mansions and cash. Victor blended a potent dose.

I had a strong enough dose of Tangenika extract in my drink to make me temporarily vulnerable. For those few minutes, I lay motionless while Emiel carried out his duties. He forced me to rape you and make sure you were irreparably damaged.

Repair. Then he forced me to deny ever having seen him. After that, Nile, I made up a tale about you and a man I can barely remember. I responded in anger. I came to question you that evening, but Emiel's compulsion kicked in when I got there.

It wasn't until my lungs began to burn from lack of oxygen that I realized I had stopped breathing. Before I screamed, I gasped and covered my mouth with my hands. I had been waiting to hear and learn this for a long time. I, however, did not wish to hear it. I didn't want to learn more. That night had robbed both my partner and me of so much. It's getting close.

They were successful in destroying both of us.

Alina, I didn't mean to hurt you. I didn't. I had to halt. However, it was now too late to turn back him from going too far. I can't recall doing what I did.

But when I regained consciousness, you were there.

When I fell asleep, I—

"Erick..."

"No." He continued to turn away from me as he shook his head. "You should

Hear me out.

I gave a head nod. Yes, I had to be aware of the whole truth. There

There were far too many unanswered questions. There were far too many inquiries.

That continues to bother me today. I didn't answer, but Erick started talking. again,

After that, "I too lost consciousness." At the time, I lacked strength.

Enough to resist Emiel's urge. I'm not certain if I'm still there. Once you

The following morning, I couldn't bring myself to look at you. I left because I couldn't bear to see what I had done to you. I pursued the Nile and the others, and after learning the whole truth from them, I killed them. I pursued Emiel after that, and as the pathetic wimp continued to walk away, he almost killed him.

I chuckled. In the end, I did succeed in defeating him and emerged as the legitimate.

Throne, but the harm had already been done.

He gave me a blank stare as he turned to face me. It made a point that I had.

I had never before heard from him.

I apologize, Alina. I'm sorry.

I embraced him and sobbed uncontrollably until my eyes ran dry.

Chapter 27

Alina

We are present. From my power sleep, Kendrick's booming voice abruptly awakened me. I mean, that happened a second time today! After Erick He told us to travel to the location. We would need to get up early.

I had an early morning notion, possibly about six or five, but not as early as

Beginning at three in the morning!

Erick was not permitted to visit me before the wedding, so it was

Kendrick was forced to awaken me. He stormed into the space.

I was pulled from my bed and dropped into the restroom by him.

I was able to tidy up, brush my hair, and put on some relaxed pants at last.

I almost always dozed off in blue pants and a full-sleeved white pullover with black polka dots. It was all because of Kendrick, who threatened me with different forms of torment every five minutes.

I was prepared and in the car by three thirty in the morning, with Kendrick behind the wheel. As soon as we pulled out of the driveway, Erick waited upstairs to join us in the rear. As soon as Ken got behind the wheel, I passed out. I consequently had no clue of our location or the route we had travelled. The only thing I could tell was that it was now 5:17 on my watch.

I wasn't in a church at a.m.

I yawned and stretched my hands and legs as far as I could.

I permitted myself to sleep, washed my eyes, and peered out the window.

Holy crap!

The scene looked like it was taken from a gothic fantasy film.

Movie. The house... Sorry, my mistake. A cliff was where the castle stood. Superior to the water. There was a beautiful sunrise on the horizon.

The castle in front of it and the background were both enormous. It was highly possible that

It might have been the largest castle in the world, for all I knew. I suddenly felt the impulse to snap pictures and post them on Instagram to enrage my imaginary pals. ferociously jealous

"Alina, please stop staring; we need to enter immediately," I said. Kendrick, holding the door uncomfortably, jolted me out of my reverie. Open at all times. I stood up and stepped out of the car. My cheeks began to flush with shame as I spoke.

Do not be. I received a warm pat on the back from Kendrick. "It

It happens to the best of us. "

Is that true if the best of us wear a mean-looking dagger on our belt loops? I've been trying to question him for a few days now, but I can't. His efforts to save Erick's life kept him too preoccupied. However, now that Erick had nearly returned to

The question had been gnawing at the back of my mind.

"I work with vampires, hey! I must be prepared for when someone.

He defended himself by saying, "Ken decided to create a main meal out of me. I like to be ready, not that it has ever happened.

"Aren't you sort of like a commander in the Royal Guard?" I questioned, not for a second believing his b.s. Defence.

"Yes." He didn't bat an eye when he conceded defeat. "Now, we

I should probably enter. Erick will soon arrive."

I nodded and went with Kendrick to the front porch of the forebodingly painted house.

Staring back at the never-ending driveway, a gigantic castle. It was lovely.

Such as the castle. There were up to twelve fountains along the entire length of the

The road with the roads on either side just before it disappears downhill. The whole landscape was covered in a variety of colourful flowers. Their smell blended and diffused in the early morning air, producing the biggest scent on the entire planet.

It would be priceless to perfume companies. I observed a crimson automobile on the ascent. Before being taken inside, I noticed the superbly carved, substantial mahogany doors.

"Alina, my love!" Together with a few other people, Kenna was there to greet me.

Women. As soon as I walked in, she gave me a big bear embrace. "Oh, you seem so worn out! Did you not obtain enough slumber the night before?"

I apologetically said, "I didn't realize I'd have to get up at three in the morning.

"Stop worrying," My cheeks were cradled in her hands. "When you feel

"Once the cleansing begins, the better."

Greetings, Alina! When Kenna came out, a stunning brunette woman in a peach knee-length lace dress hurried over to hug me.

Aside I have been so eager to meet you! Selene, Jordan's wife, here." "Hi! I'm very glad to have met you." This was, therefore, Jordan's girlfriend.

She was certainly energetic, as Erick had praised her so highly.

Ladies, we shall," Queen Kenna announced, grabbing everyone's attention.

The ceremony should now get underway. We have a lot to share with her." I was once more escorted inside and down a long hallway lined with numerous hand-drawn paintings after hearing a chorus of "yeses" from everyone around me.

The interior of the castle resembled a scene from a fairy tale. As it was

I couldn't help but notice that only these murals of fabled battles with vampires were years old as I walked on the finely made carpets. Soldiers. The canvas had been meticulously detailed, displaying the artist's talent. The walls had a pale golden colour with red accents.

Ornate Belgian glass chandeliers on the ceiling reflected the

Huge glass windows stood at regular intervals, their soft light coming from a thousand candles. With crimson silk and lace, drapes are sporadically placed. The inhabitants appeared to have lived through more than just history in what appeared to be a place where TimeTime had been stopped. Could ever have written.

As we approached the stop sign in front of another enormous pair of mahogany doors. On one, there were carvings of rose vines. Because of how realistically everything was painted, I wanted to reach out and stroke the delicate, velvety petals of the flowers in full bloom. Along with another blonde woman, Selene arrived at the spot next to me.

I was unable to recall where I had seen it previously, despite my swearing. The blonde woman said, "While you prepare the rest, we'll make her ready for the wedding."

"Then I'll let you handle it." As I was being led inside the room, Kenna and the other women stepped forward. Two guards suddenly emerged to open the doors and then vanished from view.

"Not to worry. It will require some adjustment." The woman in blonde This improved my mood.

Sorry, but have we ever met? I recall seeing you somewhere, but I'm not sure where. You seem familiar.

"You remember things well, Alina." She grinned. Her eyes are sky blue.

Her dress enhanced her eyes. "Before now, we had only met once at a

My parents gave me a party over fifteen years ago. Athena, Erick's eldest daughter, is who I am.

sister."

"Oh! I'm glad to have met you." I responded by grinning back. That clarifies why.

She had features in common with Kenna, so I always knew her.

I puzzled over why I had never seen either of Erick's sisters."

"Well, my husband and I were travelling, and Susan liked staying at the

Castle. She is somewhat reserved, but I am confident you will get along just fine. Fine. She isn't much older than Erick, according to Athena.

We entered a circular area furnished with multiple full-length mirrors and wooden sofas. It appeared that there were two more doors. One

One resembled the wooden door we just passed through, while the other was obscured by silk draperies, making it challenging to see what was beyond. A glass window near the room's ceiling let in a shaft of brilliant sunlight. The only chandelier hanging from the ceiling was this one.

Compared to the ones in the hallway, it was larger.

"Here." Selene gave me a folded piece of fine cotton cloth.

The dress is constructed of white silk and has a golden border along its entire length. "During the washing, you must only wear this robe—underwear is not permitted. It's customary. At our wedding, we all engaged in it." When I was ready to object, Selene left.

"Okay." I retrieved the robe and entered the room through the other wooden door. It was the size of the full living room but resembled a bathroom of my residence.

I was unhappy when I returned to my flat, but I was aware of that.

It was not a choice. I folded up all my clothing and set them on a seat next to the marble sink. The robe, a plain, long, rectangular fabric, was then wrapped around me like a towel. The final fold

I threw it over my shoulder and fastened it by tying a bow in the front. The cloth had already reached my calves by the TimeTime I was done. I let my hair down after that.

I pulled my hair out of the messy bun I'd put it in and took notice of the plush satin carpet beneath my feet as I stepped out the door.

That way. I assumed Athena and Selene were waiting outside the second door with the silk curtains when I was escorted through it.

We emerged through the drapes and entered another round space. This

One was four times bigger than the one I just visited. This space was

Blue drapes around it on all sides. The walls were as dazzling as the sky. Glass made up the entire ceiling. Sunlight poured in from the ceiling, falling into a big pool in the middle of the space. According to what I could see and smell, the pool was decorated with red rose petals

and was filled with milk. The room was adorned with lilies and roses in various hues. An object was placed on a small table by the pool's edge.

a collection of vintage-looking bottles containing a variety of colourful liquids,

Probably natural fragrances.

On one side of the room, three women appeared in similar white robes.

After cleaning the area, he arranged a toy throne on one side of the pool. Kenna

The delicate crimson silk of her dress began to flutter a fraction of a second later. The only indication of her accelerated speed.

Is this required? I questioned her as I looked at the pool.

Milk wouldn't stick, would it?

The sound of Kenna's laughter resembled wind chimes in the "Don't worry, sweetheart." It will wash off. This is the ritual of purification.

The Royal and Noble family must all carry out this ceremony.

Please enter at this TimeTime."

I was grateful for the little step as I made my way to the pool's edge.

Side by side. The pool's walls were very tall. Once I had stepped, I discovered two of the women, most likely servants, clutching onto each other on the wall. As I put my feet in the pool, my hands supported me and provided balance. Bottom. The water was warm, and the milk came to about my hips.

Enough to ease every muscle tenseness I have.

I was led to a table on the other side of the pool, where I sat on the bottom. I was on the other side of the wall, letting my hair fall.

The maids got to work on them right away.

It's TimeTime to address all of your inquiries now. On the chair, Kenna.

Only a few steps away was a throne. However, let me first tell you a tale.

"A tale?" I enquired with renewed interest. The bath helped me release all of my body's tension.

"Yes." She grinned. "a story about the universe's creation of Gods and Devils, and of the Vampire Race's Origin."

Do you mind if I share the story, Your Highness?

When that gentle, melodic voice was heard, several people simultaneously gasped. Kenna and the servants held their breath as they stood still. That's when a man appeared from the shadows hidden by the drapes and walked over to where the pool was. If only the overwhelming weight of the situation had not been able to keep me in place despite the strength of her might. She appeared to be a teenager, about thirteen or fourteen. She had long, dark red hair that reached her hips and looked black when not exposed to light. She, too, had dark green eyes that almost appeared black. She was dressed in a classic bottle green gown with one corner of a black lace scarf thrown over one shoulder and the other over the other arm. She had no jewellery and no cosmetics on. However, she was the most stunning female I had ever seen. Oh, the havoc she would cause when

She matured!

"Your Excellence in E! Please..." Kenna stumbled over her words. "Kenna, thank you." The girl's smile elevated the beauty of her face to dazzling. "Sit down. I'm not bothered."

But, darling, where will you sit? When Kenna approached, I gave the young woman a hug and a kiss on each cheek.

If it's okay with you, I'd like to sit close to the new Princess. She

When Kenna offered her a big smile and a nod of approval, Kenna stepped forward. I

But I was still feeling immobilized. She was who?

"Hello!" She grinned once again as she sat down against the pool's wall.

Beside me, A few of her gorgeous ringlets of hair floated out into the ocean. My name is Miaka, the Demon King, and you must be Alina."

Chapter 28

Alina

"King?" My voice was strained.

The room appeared to brighten up as Miaka smiled. Unavoidably, I experienced a hint of jealousy running through me.

What was Erick's relationship with this young lady? If His mother knew her, he undoubtedly did too. She had to be attractive based on Kenna's response to her. Far up in the ranks, the King and queen have the highest position possible, right? She often referred to herself as King rather than a queen. You are aware that I can hear you, right? She drew nearer to me and murmured enough for just me to hear her. "wizard spells.

Don't try to fix me."

She leaned back and grinned broadly as I gaped at her. Then she signalled the maids to begin working, and they eventually did.

My hair is washed.

"Alright!" Miaka joined her hands in a clap as she looked at Kenna for affirmation. She gave me a nod and then came back to me. It's TimeTime for a story.

I blinked. I couldn't wait to hear what she had to say in her explanation.

I was curious to learn more about the environment I was entering. "You must remember that all of the events I'll describe are genuine before I begin, she continued. They represent an aeon of evolutionary history and records rather than mere fiction. Only you should know about this. You do.

There must be no discussion of this outside of the Royal Family, not even with the

Nobility They are aware of the truth, but not the whole tale. We are a part of it.

Additionally, disclosure implies that you might easily put your life and the life of

Some of the individuals you care about are seriously endangered. You must pledge to remain silent." "I promise I'll never endanger Erick's life." Even before I realized what I was saying, the response was spoken in an instant. I had to have

Miaka and Kenna were grinning, so I must have said the right thing. As she started to tell her narrative, it seemed as though the entire world had stopped moving.

"Life as we know it evolved from apes millions of years ago.

Ever questioned whether apes were the only animals to evolve? Why just apes, you might ask? The fact is that a variety of animals have undergone an evolution. They developed the ability to change into human forms through magic and only basic survival instincts. They became referred to as "the shifters."

It was tranquil at first. All racial groups are mixed.

They were acquainted, and there were established guidelines for feeding. Yes, humans are typically the food, but that is how life naturally works. People weren't there anymore.

That outcome was inevitable.

"Some of them were consumed by us, and hunters slaughtered any that crossed the line. That managed our population. However, mixing several hybrids resulted from the shifter races, which is genuine.

The cleanup has started.

The brand-new hybrids were unpredictable and unstable. They killed without mercy and ate without restriction. Humanity's population started to The shifters were disappearing startlingly, suggesting that they would eventually become extinct.

However, not only animals underwent change and evolution. Certain

Humans have a strong bond with nature because they were born on this planet. They could access the energy of the Earth because they were in touch with its spirit. From this never-ending supply. They're known as the wizards.

The mages' abilities to create images were what gave them their magic.

Earth's power Some were more powerful than others, much like some people are

In comparison to other species, humans were stronger. The wizards consisted of Tuhin, Alexander, Pilates, Verna, and Shindou, the five people who were regarded as the strongest. There were three men and two women among them. "These five guys are revered as the race's saviors." They developed the plan after becoming aware of the global scenario.

The formation of dimensions is the ideal response to the confusion.

"They are other planets that resemble ours exactly but do not.

The two of them are the same.

"The news spread like wildfire over the entire planet. Everybody appeared to

The different shifter and demon races had already agreed to it because they had begun to turn against one another at the TimeTime. Every race developed a desire for dominance and power.

"The rules were established in light of certain circumstances." Each

One race can only exist in one dimension because doing so would preclude the creation of any additional progeny. Different hybrids It has been established that the hybrid offspring of two distinct.

The changing species were not only more powerful but also more hostile and dangerous.

"However, humans had the freedom to travel with their loved ones, which is

Because of this, each dimension has a proportionately large human population. It had

Because mating with a human cause a modest increase, it largely weakens the offspring's shifter traits but mostly retains the parent's skills. Additionally, having a human parent provided the

Certain things fatal to a shifter parent no longer harm the child.

Mages, who are essential of human origin, were consequently also free to

They are free to reside wherever they want.

The five wizards combined their abilities and began dividing the planet following the established arrangement. However, a significant issue developed.

— Time.

"No two identically similar worlds could coexist at the same time,"

Without ever coming back together to form a single entity.

"Tuhin was the one who found a solution." The TimeTime was changed.

Zones separate the times during which each world existed. one or more of the TimeTime moved more quickly in some dimensions while moving more slowly in others. The

The time difference ranged from a few hours to many days.

"The wizards' year-long period of concentration resulted in their creation.

Before Verna and Alexander passed away from fatigue, there were eleven dimensions. This indicated that the final dimension had not yet been entirely developed when the genesis process ended. As a result, an endless half dimension is produced. Darkness. Nobody is

entirely sure what's inside or if any landmasses have ever formed. What is known is that shifters or demons are now being dispatched.

For unforgivable offences, there is a penalty.

"With the severe stipulation that no shifter is permitted to pass across to another dimension without any good reason, the shifters, wizards, and humans were gradually moved to their dimensions. The individuals who

The rulers of the shifters and magicians are those who can roam at will."

Sanctum, a midway for all dimensions, was established to ensure that the inter-dimensional agreement is never broken. A number of The ten palaces, each of which is located in Sanctums, are owned by the monarchs of the ten worlds. The palace we are currently in is the vampire palace.

There are incubus, Lycans, tigrine, demons, mage, dragons, serpentine, etc.

Turquoise and mystical palaces. They were all members of the 10 Kings of the Dark. Let's

Let me explain the talents of the various races to you."

Wolves with the ability to transform into people are called Lycans." Yes, wolves transform into humans rather than the reverse. They don't pose a hazard to people because they often prey on other animals. They can no longer transform into their human counterparts during the full moon.

"Again, the Tigris are tigers that can transform into humans." Their

Additionally, there are very few werewolves and harpies on the planet, both of which are

Giving them their dimensions would have been a waste of TimeTime because the population was so small.

"The difference between the dragons and serpentes and the figurines is that the former can transform into a dragon or a snake. They

Because they both share a reptilian lineage, they can live together in one dimension. The incubi are creatures who consume human life energy by using sex to obtain nourishment. For this reason alone, they are also.

Despite going by the name "sex demons," they are not to be confused with the real demons.

True demons, such as myself, are unique. Additionally, there

Demons come in countless varieties, and each type has various skills that might be either psychic or physical. We distinguish ourselves from the other shifters due to the enormous diversity within our race.

The magicians have previously been mentioned to you.

The Aquas are shifters who live underwater. They occupy a city that is submerged.

They are located at the ocean's bottom, and sirens and mermaids are also there.

The mystics are enigmatic beings. They seem incredibly pallid.

White hair and pale eyes will always be a part of me. Nobody truly understands their abilities.

But nobody bothers them either.

"A dimension called Spirits also exists." As implied by its name, it is

A place where every spirit goes after leaving the body. Several

Heaven and paradise are a few of this plane's countless names."

"So those are the ten dimensions and the supernatural inhabitants.

This measurement is incorporated. Sanctum is the eleventh, and a dimension is half of Shadowland.

"The dimensions were locked after the deaths of all five magicians."

However, because the planets were initially a single entity, numerous.

All planes have openings or portals, as we call them. These

Any time, anywhere, a connection to another world can happen.

"But they aren't so simple to find. Access is possible only for a specific period, altitude, latitude, or speed. It was developed as a safety measure. to prevent a human from straying into a hostile reality." Each dimension elects its King by its customs. The eldest son's abilities are considered while choosing the vampire kings in this dimension. If he is incapable, the throne passes to the next son or the next male in line if there are no sons. The Demon Kings, on the other hand.

On the other side, they are chosen based on strength, which is chosen correctly.

Following birth. Whether you are a royal or not, and whether it is a boy or not, is irrelevant.

Regardless of gender, they are referred to as kings.

"There is, however, a single organization that oversees all dimensions. For all current systems, jointly formulate rules and impose punishment.

Creatures. All the kings and queens comprise what is known as the Dark Council.

The dimensions' top leaders The Council of Ten is frequently referred to as such due to

The ten kings that makeup it

As you can see, the world's transition happened as a result of a

The Dark Council has been in charge of ensuring security for millennia, and it continues to do so.

in every dimension."

When Miaka had finished recounting the world's creation, I was seated in a chair in the chamber I had just entered. from the room full of mirrors, the bathing quarters.

I was pulled from the pool and permitted to take a regular shower. I was so radiant after it was all over. I got support from Miaka and the two maids.

Put on my wedding gown. Miaka meticulously applied my makeup.

Considering that you don't wear any, you're quite adept at this, "I told her.

As Miaka laughed, I may not wear any, but I am a girl nonetheless. Now,

Don't move about too much; it will destroy my work."

"Okay."

I didn't move while she put on my veil and the pendant that belonged to my great-grandfather.

It is a unique pendant. It is a powerful magician who has been bewitched. That, "said Miaka.

According to my great-grandfather, the item has been in the family for many years.

"Aaron?"

Do you know him, yes? That shouldn't have shocked me. Miaka

It appears to be fully informed.

A close friend. She appeared contemplative.

"What's that?" All of a sudden, her face took on a sombrero. It gave me pause.

She said seriously, "Alina, there's something I need to tell you. You and Erick need to use extreme caution going forward. Emiel has been selected as the new King yet is still alive. He'll make every effort to kill Erick. His initial intent was to harm Erick indirectly.

Although he was harming you, he is now acting desperately. I think that's not actually what it seems to be.

Who is responsible for this, Emiel? I don't know, but I only know it's not.

Emiel. He shares Erick's fate as a victim."

"How?" How did we arrive at the same conclusion, exactly? You're aware of something, aren't you? On a stool, Miaka took a seat. Opposite to where I'm sitting.

"On the occasion of Erick's assault outside my residence, I observed a thing. Emiel had two personalities, it appeared. It resembles one

He's currently this immature being who doesn't want to harm people because

After being kind to them, he abruptly changes his attitude and acts like this.

"I told a man who simply desired to harm and kill people.

I will never forget his eyes. They stood out in red.

"Red? Are you certain?" Miaka widened her eyes.

Yes, but why?

There you both are, Alina!" Right then, Kenna entered the room. moment. "Aw, shucks! You appear stunning! OH! And Miaka, dear, the hour has come.

To modify. The others, including Erick, are eager to see you." "Indeed, Aunt Kenna. I'm going out." She got to her feet with the poise of a ballerina. "I'll see you soon, Alina!" She then quickly rushed out the door. All my queries regarding her connections to the Staytons family disappeared. If she is just like a sister to Erick,

I addressed her as Aunt Kenna.

"Alina, I'm very sorry. Even though you must eat, you must wait until the wedding ends. You could substitute a light beverage instead. She gave two handclaps. Two vampires entered the room quickly, carrying two enormous glasses that smelled like mango juice.

silver platters

How was it that I could smell them from so far away?

"Kenna?"

Yes, sweetie?

I took a glass off the tray. "I once heard from Papa that vampires.

Human healing power is accelerated by blood. How else does it function?" "Well." She poured herself a drink. "Your perceptions are slightly sharpened by it. Better hearing, better hearing, and better smells are all possible. Your emotions are also slightly elevated. Your feelings, including anger, sadness, and even anxiety, will be more intense." She looked at me, knowing.

I grin. But if the amount is insignificant, there is no need for concern.

Yes, I was aware that my heart was racing a million times per minute, but it. It wasn't because I was considering the wedding or anything like that. In reality

It was directly related to what Miaka just mentioned.

Liar, liar, fire in the skirts.

The mango drink I had just sipped almost made me gag.

Erick! What time zone are you in?

He said simply, "I never left."

I retried it. How long have you been hearing what's happening in my life? Thoughts? When you began to question whether I had slept with Miaka.

"What? That never occurred to me!"

"Pardon me?"

Kenna caught my wide-eyed gaze; she appeared both delighted and perplexed.

I meant that I had never considered that." I chuckled hesitantly.

The moment I heard Erick chuckle, I was mentally condemning him. "See, Erick provided

During that occasion, he gave me some of his blood to help me recover. Therefore, I was just.

"I was curious as to whether vampire blood had any negative consequences."

Other than the current one, which? None." Kenna stood up from the stool she was utilizing "I'll check in on you when it's appropriate. Have a pleasant discussion until then, "She remarked while grinning broadly.

After leaving the room, she closed the door behind her.

I exhaled loudly in relief.

Busted.

Aren't you having a great time doing this?

Alina, you won't even know the fun part has started until it does. His voice was rife with sexual allusions.

Speak up! Your mother abruptly vanished while wearing that peculiar smile.

Who knows what she may be contemplating? Don't stoke the fire further.

Great! Excellent timing! Vampire jerky is stupid!

Before the wedding, not much TimeTime remained, and I truly.

Dad should be here, I wish. I felt my mother was already here, with me, keeping an eye on her daughter, so I wasn't concerned about her.

Additionally, Miaka just taught me the world's largest history lesson!

She did it, nevertheless, in a way that made it easy for me to understand, like a story.

It was a lot to process, yet this was my new reality. I had no idea what was ahead, but I sensed it would be challenging beyond anything we had ever encountered.

Chapter 29

Erick

"Erick! My brother!

I turned to face the couple I had least anticipated attending my wedding.

"Lanceolin! Acelin! I'm very happy you all made it. I gave both of them. A kiss and a nudge toward a server holding champagne flutes. No dates? I inquired of the brothers. They are half-brothers. Ace

The same mother raised both of them.

Lance answered succinctly, "We ate before coming.

He did not mean by feeding blood. It was more connected to the body. Ace

Lance and Incubi are both incubi, sex demons that eat their opponent's life power. Sex. Lance could be a little too exuberant, but I understood it was their main source of sustenance. Be direct occasionally.

With his customary eloquence, Acelin intervened, "Don't mind the prince."

Cheerfulness He appears to have returned home without his sense of humour.

Lanceolin responded, "Like I keep saying, food is food, whether you like it or not.

Eat it or go to bed with it.

Ace choked on his champagne as I coughed to hide my chuckle. While most of the other guests continued to move around the room, a few of them paused to have a closer look at us. I was carrying a wineglass.

Sister Erick! Two tiny arms encircled my legs.

"Kiba!" We all three yelled at the same time.

I took the young boy with raven hair and blue eyes in my arms. Since I last saw him, he had gotten taller. He had around six years left.

The small Lycan Alpha is next.

"You alone yourself, kid? How is your brother doing? Lance questioned a little child. For some reason, Kiba was the only person Lance enjoyed spending TimeTime with.

Right this way

This TimeTime, we all turned to face our dear sister, standing behind me.

Stood in a stunning golden gown laced in gold and silver and set with tiny black diamonds. Diamond-shaped pins were used to bind her hair to one side. She was the Demon King, Miaka. Standing a little to the rear.

She resembled Kiba, Kain's twin brother, who had golden hair. Wow, three of my brothers together! "Hello, everyone!" Miaka stepped into our intimate group. "This hasn't happened for a long!"

Not too lengthy. I hugged her tightly. "You appear lovely." She explained, "That's because you haven't seen your soon-to-be bride yet.

Said as we separated. You appear to be quite handsome.

"Thanks." I kissed her forehead and grinned.

Thank you, ladies and gentlemen. Mom popped a champagne cork. Use a spoon to flute. The wedding is about to begin. Everybody led the

Please proceed to the Constantia, groom. It's now! Everybody led the

Gather around the main hall, if possible. Let's move!

It is now! Kain stayed with us as Miaka ran out to find my mother, disappearing down the hall as the visitors separated into two groups.

"Well." As I set Kiba on the ground, I turned to face my companions.

"Then let's move forward."

Unknown

"I apologize."

He was leaning against the wall the next second with blood pouring from his ears and mouth.

"Sorry? That is all you can give me, boy.

I corrected my shallow breathing, which was taxing my lungs, by taking a deep breath.

Oh, dear! This TimeTime, I used too much energy, and what good has it done? What has this vile guy already done? Nothing!

He was unable to force Erick to murder his wife. He was unable to force the Nile to murder Erick. He was powerless even to halt the wedding! Oh, dear! Emiel, what a jerk.

I continued to breathe deeply to relax. This was not the case,

Now is the time time to use my ace. It was TimeTime to consider a long-term fix. I had waited for the ideal vessel for generations and couldn't let this chance pass me.

Now that the Sanctum's gates were shut, I could not attack. Moreover,

There would be the entire Dark Council present. I was unable to address them all at once.

"Emiel, get up!" The youngster was on the ground, and I called him. I have

There is plenty to discuss. We must be ready for the next chance that comes along.

Erick can have his pleasure, but when I strike again, no one will be around to enjoy it.

Only one will live.

Alina

"Alina!" Miaka jumped through the doors as fast as she could. Move along! The time has come.

My breath suddenly became like pants, and my heart sank to the pit of my stomach.

"Alina." Both Kenna and Miaka sprinted to my aid. "Breath,

Darling, You'll be fine, despite how overwhelming this may seem. We're correct.

The TimeTime has come.

The word "overwhelming" hardly does it justice. I wanted to start breathing heavily. I instantly relaxed as I noticed Miaka's left hand resting on my shoulders and giving a faint glow. "W-what?" I gave her a wide-eyed look, and she responded by smiling consolingly.

I nodded and got out of the chair to follow Kenna and Miaka. I noticed a group of women waiting outside the room in the hallway.

Encircled by. As Kenna walked me to the Center, they dispersed from me.

And positioned me in the Center of the circle.

She pulled the veil over my head and yelled, "Everyone!" from beside me. "Let's move forward," was said.

As a group, we started to move, but instead of emerging from the

I was sent to a rear door.

Two powerful vampire guards opened the doors. First of all

There was an only bright light, but I could make out a distant cliff as it faded.

An expanse. Erick had taken me to the rock with the angels, where I gave a detailed explanation of vampire weddings. The Constantias is a little ways ahead.

Chapter 30

Alina

The Constantia appeared in the twilight's golden and red tones.

It resembles a majestic giant thanks to its tall towers and angel statues. There was now a gap in the mountain. Its doors, which resembled cave entrances, were left open for the ceremony.

Athena, now wearing a lovely purple lace dress that reaches her ankles,

Selene, wearing an ankle-length maroon dress with long sleeves and sapphire drop earrings, arrived to stand to my right.

On my left is a man with diamond embroidery on his sleeves. The queen wore her crown, a floor-length red gown with golden embroidery, and gold jewellery.

Earrings. Another young woman who resembled Erick in female form, although

She was standing next to her, wearing an embroidered green dress. Surely that is

Erick's second elder sister Susan, as well as everyone else nearby, was

I was shining in some of the most exquisite designer gowns I had ever seen. I was unable even to begin working on Miaka. She was wearing a golden gown and stood out among the rest. She didn't have any crowns, but she still looked stunning. She didn't have a crown, only a tiny diamond hair band. Although, there

Her neck was adorned with a necklace, and she was the Center of attention. With its pearl beads and ornate gold design encasing a sizable sapphire, it appeared to be an antique necklace. It had an odd vibe surrounding it.

She was the one who did it. Thus, assisting me in getting dressed today was what I still found the hardest to believe. She completed an exceptional job for a young woman of around fourteen. The woman I saw in the mirror I couldn't identify. She

She had the appearance of a princess from a story. On the other hand, my life wasn't any.

It isn't a fairy tale, though. After all, I'm wed to the Vampire Prince.

He was soon to ascend to the position of King in this dimension.

Why are there no guards present? I questioned Athena.

"Sanctum contains Constantia and all shifter palaces. It is secure.

A sanctuary for all supernatural beings and shifters. Nothing to be afraid about.

No weapons are permitted because Constantinia is a sacred temple, she declared.

Explained.

"Ladies! It's now." Kenna approached us and stood in front of us, clapping. Her fingers.

Four vampire maidens approached and stood in front of us with enormous baskets filled with white rose petals. The petals were scattered across the grass, leading directly to the Constantia. Kenna led the way as we all walked over the petals. As we came nearer to the

Constantia grew bigger and bigger. As We drove by the waterfall, I could also hear its roar. The rapid beat of my own heart was what I could hear the most. I felt good that everyone else could hear how anxious I was. But Selene seemed much too giddy for her good. We quickly arrived in front of the entrances to the

Constantia, the portals resembling cave mouths, were illuminated by several lamps. The women were led in by Kenna.

I had only seen other movie caves, but this one was unique. It resembled an old cave with several intricate carvings carved out of solid stone. The ceiling occasionally had a tendril of vegetation hanging from it. I was in shock as we reached the end of the tunnel. using the

I could never have predicted how the inside would seem from the outside.

Amazing and breathtaking Two enormous sculptures stood on the opposite side of a massive altar, which was more akin to a podium, and a large dome towered overhead. Like Erick had said, they were Hades and Nyx. The dome itself has the appearance of being carved out of rock. Designs directly carved from the stone were all over the walls. Although the designs were made in levels, there was no clear division between them. The distance at which the statues were carved out of the wall served as a marker for the separation. As the design tiers recessed farther into the wall,

The final tier was chiselled into the wall before the height increased. Each tier told different stories.

A tale of love, hate, peace, and conflict. It most likely came from the Genesis account.

They were the most lifelike statues I had ever seen, even though I had heard about them. However, the dome's ceiling was composed entirely of Glass. It was cut into eleven equal sections, creating eleven equal triangles, then painted in red and blue. Except for one blue triangle, each component has its unique symbol.

We had arrived at the altar, so I had no time to muse over it.

In front of it, there was a sizable crowd, with Erick in the lead.

Kenna took my hand as we approached the group that was waiting.

He led me to Erick by taking my hand in his. I had never seen anyone look as handsome as he did.

I'd already seen him. He was dressed in flowing black slacks and a long top of some sort with red and black patterns. His waist was fastened with an actual sword, a sheath embellished with gold motifs, and a hilt set with a sizable ruby made up the golden belt. It had to be a family, given that he was a prince and that his family had existed for a long time. But I sensed that this blade was more than simply a fashion accessory.

The disorder, you are entirely correct. I smiled as I approached and stood before him due to his telepathy.

"You appear lovely." He grinned while devastatingly changing that face. Handsome.

I replied, "Thank you. Is this any sort of pick-up line for you guys at weddings?"

Erick coughed to mask his laughter as he choked on it. Seriously, wedding pick?

Yes, that is what every groom tells his bride right away. Perhaps it's because men genuinely think their brides are stunning. I was blushing at it.

Everything was going smoothly until Selene approached me with a syringe shaped like a sword and a vial containing a yellowish-green liquid that made me think of evil.

Experimentation in a vintage horror film. My eyes grew wider. Why on Earth is that needed? I made an effort to control my nervousness, but it was all I managed to do was make everyone laugh. "Alina, this is an anaesthetic. "For a short period, your hand will become numb. And avoid blood clots. It's for us to fasten the righteous branch to your wrist. Hand, "She spoke up.

"Oh." How did I miss the most troubling aspect of a vampire wedding?

Telepathic Erick, in your defence, this is your first TimeTime. I'm grateful. As Selene placed the needle into my hand, I groaned.

He injected the sticky stuff into my bloodstream, sleeves and all." How

How long before it begins to function?"

My arm was bit by Selene.

I looked at my arm while blinking. I raised my other hand to pinch it after bringing it up to my eyes for a better look. I glanced at Selene. "That fast?"

"Yes," but don't go too far. Otherwise, it'll sting terribly when it.

THEN WEARS OFF. Smirking, Selene. The lady truly grinned. Why did it seem like she wasn't being gentle with her pinch?

Kenna yelled, "Erick, Alina, please step up to the altar."

Please make room for the couple, everyone.

As we turned to face the altar, the audience moved to make room for us. Erick moved forward and offered his hand to me. I moved up to the altar while picking up the hemline of my dress to avoid falling and

I stumbled because of the shroud that was over my face. I didn't want to look foolish.

At my wedding, I.

That brought back memories of my father. He ought to have come.

To carry me to the altar and down. He ought to have delivered me to my spouse, but he could not do so. He couldn't leave his hospital bed due to his condition and this ridiculous vampire tradition.

We salute the King!

At that moment, a clamour of voices could be heard, followed by the music of multiple trumpets blaring directly outside the Constantia. Within, the

The enormous group of individuals dispersed like a sea wave and a tornado.

From the entryway to the altar, a path was created. The following wave of

Everyone in the room bowed respectfully, including the speaker.

Kenna. The sole exception was a small gathering that gathered around the altar. Composed of Erick and Miaka, as well as two men, two boys, and

I.

At that moment, a man entered the tunnel through the exit and the entire.

The air in the room was held. He was dressed similarly to Erick but in gold. On his hips was a sword similar to Erick's but considerably larger and more gorgeous. However, it was the aura of might he exuded that.

Even if you didn't notice the diamond, it was still a blatant indication of who he was.

A jewel-encrusted crown atop his head. The Vampire King appeared.

Even the thought of him as my prospective father-in-law felt out of place. But at the same TimeTime, I couldn't deny the evidence that he did.

He resembled an older Erick because of his long, shoulder-length hair.

Darker honey than blond was present on the shoulders.

Erick signalled for me to bow as he walked up to the altar, and I did so. I did the same and was able to create a courtesy bow with some modifications.

Everyone watched as the King arrived at the altar in front of us.

They got up from their seats. When I noticed him raising his hand, I was about to do the same. I took it and got to my feet. I was once again amazed by how much he resembled his son. Ten years older than his son, he hardly appeared so.

"We finally met, Alina," he added with a smile.

You're just as wonderful as Erick said, I must say.

T: I'm grateful. Because of his influence, I stumbled. "Miaka, sweetheart, let's not put off the ceremony any longer." For her, he extended his hand.

A maid approached Miaka and gave her a silver plate. The plate has a branch on top with a lot of sharp thorns. The branch must be to blame for the Tengenika tree that Erick mentioned. It would stop our blood from clotting, so it doesn't drip into a bowl or another object. She presented the King with the branch.

He accepted it and handed the branch to Erick, who was getting ready to put on his coat. The King approached me after wrapping the branch around his wrist.

I reluctantly put up my hand. I was aware that I wouldn't experience it.

However, I had never really liked thorns. He tied the branch around my wrist, and I closed my eyes. I opened my eyes to find Erick staring at me. He took hold of my hand with his. Blood had already begun to flow from the

The punctures created by the thorns

The cuts will recover from my blood before the anaesthesia wears off. Eric Erick gave comfort.

Despite my heart racing out of my chest, I nodded. This was taking place. Erick and I were getting married.

The King brought us to a spot near the palace by taking our hands in his

The monuments Our blood splashed together on the ground, creating a small pool that eventually filled a crucible at the gods' feet after rolling through a drain.

Which was positioned underneath the ground. I could hear Miaka's voice behind me as the blood slowly accumulated.

Oh, powerful Lord of the Underworld and guardian of the night, this blood.

You are what we offer as a sacrifice to unite two souls. May they ever be.

By this blood and marriage link, they are joined together. Please grant them a favour.

Oh God, exercise your sanctifying powers! Be their compass and guardian. All I ask is this.

As your student and daughter. May you be with us in your direction. forever."

The branch around our wrists started to light brightly all of a sudden.

The room was filled with gasps as a result of the bright illumination. As soon as the redness started to lessen, I covered my eyes with my free hand.

I opened my eyes when the light was gone, and the first thing I

The blood from the crucible had disappeared, which was the first thing I noticed. I

I was shocked and surprised as I stared at Erick, but all he did was smile.

"The union has been approved by the Gods!" The volume of the cheer that followed the King's roar caused the entire dome to tremble. With a silver cup in her hands, Kenna ascended to the altar and placed it in our hands.

To gather the blood that was still falling. She then handed her son the cup.

"Son, complete the ritual. be bonded by a common blood connection." Erick took the cup from his mother and placed it on his lips.

He took a sip and then put the drink to my lips. I gave him a wary glance.

Except for that fateful night, Emiel assaulted us; the only other occasion I had ever tasted blood was when I lost a tooth as a little child after falling down the stairs. That strange salty flavour didn't appeal to me. But since this was part of a ceremony, I snatched the cup from Erick, flung my head back, and drank the last of the blood. It was a good thing there wasn't much to drink. I took a swallow,

There was more applause after that. Once more, it.

More than ever, it wasn't quiet.

The branch was ultimately taken from our hands after the ceremony. Erick's skin recovered right away, but it took me a few minutes to get my skin back to normal. The crowd was then led back to the palace, where the reception was held. Since we hadn't had enough time, Erick and I

Our dialogue suggests that the fact that he was now my spouse hadn't begun to sink in.

I didn't have time to reflect on him at this TimeTime, though. I was fairly certain.

In this room, there were more than 500 strange creatures, not all of which were vampires. Two mystics were visible earlier with snow-white hair and nearly translucent skin. For the others, I was unable to.

However, I'm aware that some staff members distributed blood and champagne to

While the guests were not visible to me, I did see a few trays of snacks and, uh, was that raw meat? I didn't even want to know what they were for.

In the meanwhile, I met around 200 individuals thanks to

Athena and Kenna, Although Erick was missing, I once saw him with Kendrick. Except for a few people I had already met, like my grandfather, I hardly paid attention to the other guests; the rest of them I promptly forgot as soon as I moved away from Jordan and his wife, Selene. Yes, I paid. I was being led to the group. I was being led to the right at this moment. Miaka, the four guys, and a small group of five people were the only ones who did not bow before the King. This TimeTime, however, I only saw one of the two boys.

The person with black hair was not present.

Kenna brought me to the group and gave me a brief introduction to each member.

"Alina, I'll introduce you to Acelin and Miaka since you've already met Miaka.

They are incubi, and his younger brother Lanceolin is their prince.

The younger Lycan Prince, Kain, is this lovely young man. His sibling is

Their top Alpha, Kiba, "seems to be absent somewhere,"

"Not to worry. Jordan merely abducted him." The attractive Acelin. The blond man smiled and reassured Kenna. Why, oh why, was everyone here so attractive?

"Mother." With the help of his vampire speed, Erick appeared by my side. Again!

Yes, sweetie?

Can I please take Alina with me? "I think Alina had enough for one day," she said. Me? She must take a nap." My saviour Erick!

"Of course, I say! How foolish I was. I totally missed it!" Kenna

I presumably remembered that I was still a person when I gasped. Bring her to

Erick, it's your room. Dinner will be sent shortly."

"I appreciate it, Mom." Erick held my hand and led the way out of there. Many spectators observed us from the crowd with knowing smiles, making me flush bright crimson.

I said to him when we were alone in the hallway, "Thank you.

"No issue. You've had a long, exhausting day, but I knew my mum would forget.

Day. Let's go. I'll let you relax now, but you still have to see a guest.

"Erick told me," came first.

I moaned in disapproval. "No, please! My feet are hurting so much! I will not

If I don't sit down, I'll lose feeling in my legs, I complained.

I promise you'll want to meet this visitor before you get some rest. He did

He took me up the stairs at the end of the corridor, past the room where I had changed, and then he stopped in front of a pair of enormous double doors that were at least as magnificent as the rest of the castle. This door featured a war scene.

Inscribed thereupon. Two armies stood on opposing sides as their commanders engaged in a dialogue. They got into a bloody duel. Their weapons were lethal, and their faces were ferocious.

In a flash of lightning, they collided. It seemed like I was there since it was so real. The conflict I was seeing.

And who is this visitor you believe I will be eager to meet? I queried if

The magic was broken when he pushed open the doors.

Of course, I.

I finally caught sight of the person inside the room, and my eyes widened.

Sitting in a wheelchair with Kendrick by his side was all too familiar.

The look on my most beloved person's face.

"Papa!"

Lanceolin

"Brother, what's wrong?" "You appear anxious." Ace sprang to his feet. I chose to express my dissatisfaction with what I saw in front of me.

Why do you have to follow me around and watch my every move, Acelin? "I counter-asked about it.

"Because Miaka was the one who made you seem like that, and

He said, "She might be the only one in your life you've ever loved."

He has been corrected. Erick and I have cared for her since she was a newborn, even though we are not her biological brothers. She was taught how to walk, talk, and fight by us. You couldn't help but love her. We'd provide. We will offer her our lives if she requests it. Although we can never be completely furious with her, The person who made me frown wasn't Miaka. What she had said was what caused it.

"I recently heard something pretty interesting from Miaka.

How upsetting, I said to Acelin. It has to do with Erick's rivalry.

Was it, Emi asked? Ace said, "What's so disturbing?" as I nodded.

about him?"

Miaka said, "Alina told me something today.

"Something that implies ownership."

"Impossible!" Acelin gave her an unbelievable look. Possession?

How?"

"I have a suspicion, but we haven't confirmed it yet." We were directed to a

In a quiet spot where nobody could hear us. "If what I'm contemplating

If this is the case, then the struggle for the throne is over.

Acelin begged Miaka, "I don't understand. What do you not are?

Please tell me. What is so wrong with this?"

If what we believe to be true, it's quite horrible. I gave Miaka a nod. Acelin

Though he would fret, he wouldn't whisper. Miaka glanced at me before agreeing. She then validated what I had been thinking all evening.

"An old is waking up."

Chapter 31

Alina

"Papa?" I gave Erick a startled glance. However, how? "Unless you're the bride, humans are not permitted inside the Constantia." His index finger touched my nose. But nobody asserted that he couldn't.

Visit the castle.

I turned around and encircled his neck with my arms. I'm grateful.

I shrieked. You don't know how much this means to me!

Everything for my beautiful wife. He laughed.

I was reminded that we were married, something I had no idea about but had always assumed was feasible from the beginning.

It is disgusting, especially in light of that event. I am now happily married to the

Vampire Prince voluntarily chose to be. When I first got going, I was unaware of trusting.

He and I get along. However, I was now aware that I would never abandon him, just like

He would never abandon me, I knew.

I sprinted over to my father after separating from him. I collapsed to the floor in a heap. I knelt before him, put my head in his lap, and encircled his waist with my arms. Moments later, I heard the door close, and I understood that Erick and

To give us some privacy, Kendrick had gone outdoors. My darling Princess, how are you doing? "Why does your sleeve have blood on it?" He had a troubled tone.

It's alright. Not to worry. Remember that this was a vampire wedding?

I stood up and turned to face the red spot on my right hand's sleeve. My wounds were treated with anaesthetics and Erick's blood. See? "I unzipped the sleeve to reveal clear, unblemished skin. Everything is good. "Oh, dear God!" He looked fatigued as he let out a breath. He appeared to be older than I remembered him to be.

You don't look so well, papa. You should go back to the hospital. I took hold of his hand. They were starting to wrinkle up everywhere. And he was only 49 years old.

I promise, honey. I'm very sorry I was unable to attend your wedding,

Even though I gave you to Erick, I could still see you today. Thank you so much to your spouse. I'm at peace right now. He cupped his hands over my face. And kissed my cheeks after my forehead.

After hearing a knock at the door, Kendrick opened it. I

Wiped the tears that had accumulated at the outer corners of my eyes.

Deluca, Mr.

Kendrick informed my father, "It's time to take you back to the hospital."

He replied to Kendrick, "Yes, I'm ready," and then he turned to face me.

"I appreciate you honouring your mother's final request, honey. I want you to

I have a full and happy life in front of me.

Kendrick then rolled his wheelchair out of the space and exited the

On his way out, he opened the door, but not before giving me what I requested him to.

Acquired this morning. I carefully hid the object in the folds of my dress.

I whirled around to bid my father farewell.

I didn't take in the space until after that. It was enormous.

Big, yet it looked more like a bedroom. The room included a massive king-sized bed, and a large chandelier lit up the entire space.

Giving the space a golden tone. There were numerous doors scattered everywhere, and there The walls were covered in stunning paintings. Some displayed combat scenes. While others featured stunning scenery, one picture showed Kenna holding a small child in her arms, but I couldn't determine if it was Athena, Susan, or Erick. Additionally, there were some exquisite and elaborate arrangements. Vases may be found everywhere. Although the blooms appeared like roses, I had never experienced a fragrance like that before.

In a low voice that I knew he could hear, I said, "Thank you.

"I believe you thanked me already." He spoke to me from my right behind.

I took a deep breath and shut my eyes as I sensed Erick's

My hands follow the length of my arms before stopping at my dress's sleeves. My arms flowed from my shoulders. He said "relax" in my ear.

My hot breath was kissing my cheeks.

I took another long inhale and satisfied my ferocious internal desire.

Even when I despised Erick, I was always conscious of his presence.

To him. I laid my head on his chest while leaning my back against him.

The shoulders. I conceded to him. Erick's arms very immediately encircled me.

We kept quiet for a long time and let the silence envelop us.

Into a peaceful, quiet cocoon. Erick ultimately broke the comfort.

Silence. I want to show you something.

"What?"

"Not quite," I scowled but allowed him to go on. "You ought to alter first.

In the bathroom, I have some clothing for you.

"OK." What might he have to show me right now?

I had grown accustomed to Erick preparing my clothes at this point. Going into the

I locked the door after Erick had given me the necessary directions.

And briefly leaned against it. The time was late at night, and the entire.

Thousands of candles and chandeliers the size of whales lit up the castle.

No electricity appeared to be present in this area. But in a world where magic rules, who needs electricity when a stick will do far more exciting things? Thought?

Half expecting to find something ridiculous, I went up to the counter. Instead of undergarments, a plain red dress that topped my knees and a matching white jacket. I changed into them and sat there.

On the counter, the bridal gown and veil were tidily folded. I decided to let go and let my hair down.

I get on the floor and remove all of my makeup. I never actually used cosmetics. Because of my skin's sensitivity, I developed rashes if I left them on for too long. Sensitive. I also decided to leave my jacket behind because of how warm it was outside.

I doused myself in water and exited the restroom.

I discovered that Erick had also changed into a black full-sleeved shirt and white jeans.

Formal pants. His dark clothing was the ideal complement to his stunning appearance.

Provided a stark contrast in his eyes. As I entered the room further, he came over to me.

Do you recall the time Emiel showed up at your house?

He asked, referring to the incident where I almost lost him, "Apartment?" It

Still finding it difficult to realize that it was only a few days ago

"I'm very certain that I never, ever want to remember that night." I put my hand on his chest to remind him he was still there. I had

That night was the most frightful I've ever felt of losing him.

"OK." A few loose hairs were placed behind my ear by him.

His arms encircled my waist. But you do recall how quickly I arrived.

That isn't there, is it? You called for me, and I responded immediately.

I squinted. He was correct. I was too disoriented that night to realize how quickly he had come to save me. Erick's skin had begun to heal after I had been there.

The risk. Even the physician who visited Erick subsequently attested That the spike was lodged in his chest for at least three hours. "You are correct! How did you arrive there so

quickly? Did you happen to be nearby? No, he chuckled. "This is why I arrived there so quickly."

I repeatedly blinked to clear my vision back and started to

When I continued to see just blackness, I became alarmed. "Erick?"

"Relax. Simply shut your eyes. It will be alright in a little while. I followed his advice. His arms around my waist served as an anchor for me. When I opened my eyes this time, I could see that we were no longer in

The beach house Erick has in Canada, not the castle.

"How— what? We were supposed to be in a different realm! I

I scanned the area once more to be sure I wasn't having a hallucination. Nope. I

At Erick's beach house, I remained. Why did we... Can you teleport?

As He took in my gaping body, Erick's chest vibrated with repressed laughter under my palms. I would have been angry if I hadn't been so stunned by the unexpected news. Erick is teleport-able!

I can, but that's just half of it, he replied with a smile.

My eyes grew even wider as I pondered whether or not that was possibly feasible. "What?"

"Shah." Erick put his index finger over my lips to stop me from speaking.

Tomorrow, we'll chat about myself. This evening is ours.

My spine tingled at the possessiveness in his voice.

A positive kind of shudder.

He remarked, letting go of me and taking a few steps away, "I think we need a dip." He unbuttoned his shirt as he pulled the end out of his jeans. I immediately swivelled my head to the side, trying to

Erick didn't appear to be bothered by it, though.

I continued to look at the pool behind him. Then they started to stray.

A gazebo on the other side of the pool featured a table with a champagne bottle and glasses, along with a bed, and was surrounded by thousands of red and white candles that were lit on it. The pavilion and the steps leading up to it were covered with rose petals. His shirt fell to the ground, and his hand sprang up in front of my face a split second later. I was startled to see him grinning down at me when I glanced up at his face. You're next. He pleaded

I tentatively placed my hand in his, and all of a sudden. He tugged me forward. Abruptly, causing me to knock into his exposed chest. Erick proceeded slowly.

I was then turned around such that my back was against his chest after he had steadied me.

He touched my arms again, and I tightly closed my eyes as he did so. He didn't stop at my shoulders this time. My back was covered in his hands. He grabbed for my dress's zipper. He tugged, and I gasped for air. I pulled down the zipper until it reached my lower back.

Erick rushed me, perhaps because he knew I needed time to ponder.

If he did, he would give up. He slowly pulled the fabric down by hooking his fingers onto it. He then pulled down the remainder of the

With a startled cry, I took the cloth and let it wrap around my waist. Leaving me to wear nothing but my underwear.

Then he drew me back up against his exposed chest. "The impact of his

My gut tightened as warm. Naked skin touched mine. In place of

He kissed my shoulder and trailed lips up and down as he further undressed me through my neck. I felt my back naturally arc toward him. Was this meant to feel this good? My thoughts were racing.

I initially stood there with my back straight as he began slowly backwards. I then heard a belt unbuckle and a zipper being opened. His pants landed on the tile floor after being pulled down. I was yanked back and tossed into the pool the next thing I knew. I tightly closed my mouth, avoiding swallowing water, and spread me. I encircled myself with my arms and let buoyancy bring me back to the surface. A split second later, the water surfaced over my head.

"Erick!" I immediately snapped at his laughing body. I'm more than three feet from you. It's not amusing. Taking off my hair, I said. Out of my face. "What if I wasn't able to swim?"

In a moment, he was gone, blinking in front of me. I would never have allowed you to drown. He spoke with the utmost sincerity.

I wouldn't have believed him a few days ago, but I did after seeing The Real Erick. I'm aware now. I planted my feet firmly on the pool's surface.

I took a step, feeling the water's warmth against my bare skin. At the nape of his neck, I leaned in and entwined my hands. He was pulled toward me as I rubbed my lips across his.

Erick didn't require any additional invitations. In the next split second, his hand encircled my waist. His other hand cradled my face and pulled me close.

I squeezed him closer until there was no more room between us. He didn't restrain his passion today. He placed the tiniest bite against my lower lip, which felt like a red-hot brand as he brushed his fangs across it.

As soon as I gasped, his tongue was inside of me.

Mouth, tasting everything, and probing every crevice. The walls struck my back.

But Erick's hand cushioned the hit.

I gasped as Erick's mouth touched mine, and he trailed little kisses down.

Just halting at the pulse in my neck.

As heat accumulated between my legs, my back curved in anticipation. My heart was thumping, and it felt like the blood in my veins was only travelling to two places. I shivered as Erick licked over the rapid pulse. I

I squeezed his neck harder as I drew him further to my body.

Erick didn't, however, bite. Giving me one final chomp with his teeth

I turned to face the pool's walls after he twisted me around. My abrupt movement caused water to pour over the poolside as Erick yanked my hair out of my back and over my shoulder. He began to unhook the bra clasp from my back and pull the straps down my arm as I held my breath. As soon as he took off the bra and threw it into the pile of garments next to the pool, my arms went to cover my chest reflexively.

I shivered like a goose at the sensation of the cool night air on my exposed skin. My skin had bumps all over it. My face began to pink as it warmed up. Erick, though, turned his back on me. Another piece of fabric was flung into the pool a split second later, adding to the expanding pile. These were Erick's shorts.

"Alina." Erick's hushed remark made me aware that I had closed my eyes. Are you feeling uneasy? He inquired. A was present.

His voice has a softness I've never experienced before. I thought about what he had said. No, I didn't feel uneasy. Possibly shy, Not uncomfortable, though. This did not happen four years ago. That is not the case here.

Erick entered my home against his will under Emiel's pressure, injuring me.

No, he wasn't that Erick anymore. He would never be like that again.

Vulnerable. Then, with surprising clarity, I realized that I wanted to be

Along him. not only because he went to such trouble to force me. Cosy this evening. I'm not just saying that since I'm now his wife. I desired this for my use. I yearned for him to touch me. I wanted him to leave such a strong aroma on me that no one could tell us apart. I desired him. I closed my eyes and turned slowly towards him, lowering my hands to my side as I did so. Erick pushed us.

The water was barely a few inches deep over my waist because the pool was at the shallow end. I was quite open with him. assembling enough

I resisted the impulse to hide my breasts once again and forced myself to open my eyes.

To look into his deep blue eyes, which appeared to glow internally. He was giving me a direct stare while wearing an expression I couldn't read. He appeared to

The expression vanished as I noticed something in my eyes, only to

It was replaced by a pang of hunger that appeared to swallow the entire world, including me.

I won't hold back, Alina. It was a request and a warning.

I could care less. The statements rang true.

The next second, with my back to the pool, Erick was on me.

I felt his lips on mine. I sucked as his hands moved to my breast, and he licked the back of my throat. He grabbed a nipple as it began to bud. Excruciatingly, causing my mouth to groan. His hands didn't stop at my breasts, though. They started at my waist and worked their way down to my hips. The

The next thing I knew, he had pulled me flat and ripped my pants to pieces. So that his hard length touched my lower body. The warm water cools the hot skin of my femininity.

I rubbed against him because of the pain, even though I was already soaked.

Without shame, to draw closer. I wished he were inside of me. For too long, I had suppressed my urges. I haven't taken a boyfriend or had a relationship since that night with Erick.

Never did I deceive anyone. My very first boyfriend, and still is now, is Erick. He would undoubtedly be my final.

Are you certain? Erick had developed a gruff, guttural voice. It resembled

He struggled a lot to control himself.

"Yes." I exhaled deeply. My nails sunk into his flesh as my hands reached his shoulders.

If I injure you, scream, and I'll stop. Tell me, goddammit! As he made his way to my entrance, he growled and pressed his cock's pointy head on me.

As he slowly entered, I could only nod since my voice was getting caught in my throat. I raised one leg while holding onto his shoulders for support. Hooking them around his waist one by one. A hand of his emerged.

He turned around to help me and set the other person on the pool's edge next to my head.

He was completely buried inside of me with one powerful, deep thrust. My

To fit him as well as me, my inner muscles tensed up in both pleasure and anguish.

My breasts were raised in an offering as my head dipped back. I couldn't contain it, and I

I yelled. My thoughts briefly returned to what he had said, and I anxiously grabbed at him to tell him not to stop. He understood the message somehow.

Erick growled out, "So tight," through clenched teeth, and I heard the

The sound of tile and cement breaking under his weight. However,

He kept a gentle but firm grip on me.

He almost completely withdrew before throwing it back to the fullest extent.

About the other's name, we both complain. He started slowly, but he got better.

I lost my pace when my hips bucked to match his thrust for thrust. He was soon

His eyes were a brilliant blue, and he was slapping me like a beast in rage.

Never previously have I seen this. Although he was acting much too rudely

Even though it was challenging, I didn't hurt. I think I could even feel the beginning of my orgasm. Erick kept turning, and I could feel the swirl of pleasure in my womb. Each stroke turns my blood into honey, driving me slightly wild with pleasure.

I wasn't sure if I was shouting because of the blood rush.

I closed my eyes and gripped Erick more as I heard a raucous shout in my ear. Never before had I felt so intensely alive, and I yearned for more.

Erick accelerated his thrusts as much as he could until I could not keep up. Until the warmth of his body, the aroma of dark chocolate, and something distinctly manly that was Erick's overwhelmed my senses.

Up till I saw stars, he persisted in his efforts.

Screaming each other's names, we made one last push and

We clung to one other so closely that even air could not separate us. The

Around us, the world was bursting into a million fragments of passion.

After the orgasm that tore through me, I trembled and felt a part of anything strangely for the first time. I was Erick's as much as he was mine.

Chapter 32

Miaka

Three hours had passed after Erick and his newlyweds had teleported away when I first heard it: the unmistakable sound of an unidentified footstep in the corridor.

With each passing day, my senses became keener. Soon

If I did, I wouldn't be able to tell

could flawlessly blend into the darkness. Generate any noise. I would soon become as silent as the night itself. I was more quickly than anyone anticipated. The beginnings are expanding. I had to slow down several times today because of that weak talent.

I went after the intrusion.

Most people, with a few exceptions, had retired to bed.

Either they were on the castle grounds or behind the bar. Their

The footsteps continued long enough for me to recognize their pattern. That or counting fictitious sheep jumping over my bed, I suppose. However, this one was fresh. I couldn't determine the goal of whoever it was, but it sounded like they had one. So, I trailed behind as quietly as possible to avoid stirring the air currents around me. After all, vampires had a keen hearing.

The individual in front of me continued to advance through the pitch-blackness.

To keep an eye out for obstinate intruders, numerous guards roamed the hallways and up the stairs that led to the roof.

I ascended the steps, confident that, in an emergency, I would have support. Onto a vacant roof after the invader and through the open door.

Shit!

Just a split second ago, I was standing where an arrow had struck. It was aimed at my head. I noticed many dark shadows as I turned to look around.

Slip out of the shadows to encircle the intruder in a semicircle. They

They had glistening red eyes and were silhouettes.

Two shits!

I had the impression I had been cheated. It doesn't matter who laid this trap.

You must be very familiar with me. I remained there myself to blend into the darkness and deny the intruders their satisfaction.

One gets caught in their trap.

However, they were aware that I was present. Vampire hearing and vision were equally acute. Obviously, I was to be used as leverage by the king in exchange for Erick or Alina, even if they may not have understood who they had.

I then understood what he had been up to the entire time.

I was powerless to harm him or the guards. They had vampire blood, and

To harm them would violate a long-standing agreement whose beginnings were forgotten with time.

I, therefore, took the only action I could.

ERICK!

Edward Erick

A towel covered Alina's limp body while I attempted to prevent her from getting sick. Our infatuation may have softened the cutting edge of the

I sympathized with her, but I wasn't at all satisfied.

Small steps To slow down, I had to remind myself. Since I couldn't afford it, We messed up this delicate trust relationship by coming on too strong.

I walked up the stairs after exiting the lake carrying her in my arms.

With her hair still wet, we carried her to the pavilion and placed her down on the plush silk blankets.

I couldn't resist myself and stroked my hands down the skin of her front.

As I set her down, the towel slipped, revealing her breasts. Down.

Alina trembled a little but kept her eyes closed. She'd

After our poolside union, I slept off. And enticing as it would be, I pulled the covers over her instead of investigating her. As I drew the covers up her chest, rose petals scattered all over her body.

ERICK!

The strength of Miaka's mental call almost knocked me off my feet.

There was a serious issue. Not Miaka called me for assistance.

Unless there was nothing she could do, Miaka never asked for assistance. Ken! He left to take Alan to the hospital, although he was supposed to be back by this point and was supposed to be outside the house watching it. In an emergency, I had given him some of my earlier blood. Taking good care of the house yet not

Arrive inside. If you sense something, let me know.

Yes, sire, he curtly said.

I then tugged on my top and put on a pair of comfortable, loose-fitting slacks to allow for movement. I left via teleporting.

Alina was clinging to Kendrick's assurance that he would protect her.

I focused on the recollection of the spacious hallway and pictured myself.

When I opened my eyes, I was standing next to a pillar, just where I had been when I had closed them. I was the only vampire in the entire world that could teleport.

I liked history, but that also meant I had no solid foundation on to base my knowledge. I had to learn to be accurate or get stuck between two walls.

I dropped off a cliff.

How are you doing? Here I am. Even though only a few seconds had passed,

In those few seconds, after she called me, a lot could have happened. Instantly, I heard her voice in my thoughts. It was unambiguous and made no reservations. On the roof am I. 10 guards, have fallen. They are self-propelled and remain cloaked in mystery.

I grabbed a blade from a wall fixture and called the backup guards.

I ran into the wall and quickly climbed the stairs. I didn't enter even though the door was open.

I'll keep quiet. Thank goodness the lights on this side of the castle were out. A single shadow was surrounded by eleven other shadows in a semicircle when I peered through the side of the door. They had strange lights in their eyes. Red colour.

Shit. They had a possession.

Within a few seconds, the following few events took place. The middle shadow extended his hand upward. The fighters launched an all-out assault, lunging for the area where I believed Miaka to be. My blade swung with incredible speed. Several guards emerged.

They attacked the other guards after emerging from the shadows. My legs were being rolled away by two decapitated skulls.

"Erick!"

A clash was heard as I automatically raised my blade above my head.

Not a moment after. I flung back the person whose blade was linked with mine, telling myself to thank Miaka for the warning later. His blade slid down mine, shooting a shower of sparks as he flew back, making the predicament on his face clear.

Emiel.

It was Emiel who attacked. The idiot decided to come after all.

I permit you to penalize Miaka Von Felts per.

"Those who seek to undermine the royal line." My voice may be heard throughout

They

The next instant, the air currents changed and got stronger by the second. The cries of Emiel came next. I didn't realize this for a while. Conclusion. He sensed the presence of an unseeable hand holding him in place by the air.

His chest and limbs were crushed. If I allowed it, he would soon be dead.

God understood that the torture would continue and that he deserved it. Never can we be

Regardless of what Alina believed I was capable of, there.

Unchangeable things. I couldn't kill him yet, though. Grab him! I made a guard call. Moments later, fifteen swords were already aimed at his throat as the air currents slowly and agonizingly weakened.

Emiel collapsed to the ground when the currents disappeared, struggling for air. The guards moved quickly. Someone struck him with a weapon's hilt. The others brought him to the dungeons beneath the castle, where no natural light could enter as he felt the blade strike the back of his head, knocking him out.

Penetrate.

Next to me, Miaka appeared out of the shadows.

I'll speak with a magician. For no magic to elude the dungeon, instruct her to close it. Get in, she commanded.

You do it, I told her. "I must visit Alina again to confirm

She is secure.

"Go. I'll handle everything around here. Acelin lingered. I'll enlist his assistance.

I teleported out and arrived at my beach house. Before going to the pool, I checked everything. Kendrick was also consulted to see whether he had heard or felt anything strange.

I exhaled when I climbed the gazebo stairs after holding my breath.

As I observed her soundly dozing on the bed with rose petals all about,

shining a light over her pendant and long, dark hair,

There is a flat brightness to the moonless night.

I slid in alongside her and took off my shirt before wrapping my arms around her waist. I quickly dozed off to deep sleep.

Alina

I was awakened by the unified chirping of a thousand seabirds.

I woke up from my nap. There was some light on the horizon even though the sun hadn't yet risen. The fact that I was on a bed with sheets was, however, the most unexpected. Erick was asleep next to me. His arm slung my waist as I raised the object to my chest.

Let me rephrase that, please. Erick napped next to me. His arm was tucked under my head, and my head was resting on his shoulder. My waist was under my hand. Putting mine on top of his. All that was covering us was the covers. At least for me, such was the situation. Erick's legs were covered in something silky, but his upper body was still nude.

He had a youthful appearance and could have passed for a college student. If not for the depth of understanding in his eyes, student. Now those eyes were. Closed, and shadows from his long, dark lashes fell across his cheekbones. To try to control my temptation to touch his face and trace his lips with mine, I curled and tucked my fingers into my palm.

I was about to stand up and take a shower or avoidance manoeuvre.

When I learned that this didn't have to be embarrassing, I was experiencing the "morning after" embarrassment. I was Erick's, and he was mine. We still had all of our lives to live, which was for all time. This reminds me that I have a question for Erick.

The entire vampire phenomenon How exactly do I become one?

Why have you gotten up so early? His tired voice jolted me out of my thoughts, but his eyelids were still closed when I turned to face him. I thought I saw him remove his hand from my shoulder. He was probably showing me the door.

I said frankly, my voice quiet, "I get up early." But I stayed by his side instead of leaving. Dark chocolate with a spice undertone and something much more sinister was in the air. Edward Erick

My nerves were calmed as it swept over me.

How did I become involved in all of this? Soon enough, Erick will be anointed ruler of the entire vampire race, with me as his consort. There

For both of us, there were no alternatives or other options. He did indeed say it. No one else would be available for either of us. For all time, we were bonded. But I wasn't prepared for it. Still not. It appeared as though everything.

It is taking place too quickly and too soon.

What life experience might a vampire have? I wasn't a moron. I was aware that

I wasn't about to deceive myself; it had to shift sooner rather than later.

By declaring I'd rather not, I'd prefer not to lose my humanity. Even vampires have compassion. I've met enough decent vampires in the brief time I've known them to be aware of that. The person was what was important. Nevertheless, regardless of their personalities, everyone hinted at the superior race's arrogance. Erick had plenty of it.

I'm beginning to regret giving you your engagement ring, you know. His piercing blue eyes caught my attention. Who are you?

Why on earth did they think that?

I grimaced. How are you unable to hear me? Both of us drank the

We performed the ritual of blood mixing yesterday, didn't we? I was perplexed. Because of their established link, weren't they able to read minds after consuming vampire blood?

Erick leapt up so quickly that I nearly had whiplash. He

A second later, I was pulling on him.

Erick had a death rattle, and I held the covers to my chest as I gasped.

I hold onto my other hand. My face was turned toward his terrified eyes by his fingers. "Erick? What is the issue? He searched with a glance in his eyes and a touch that conveyed urgency.

I was starting to get scared of my eyes. Do you have any memories of last night? I put you on.
"Is the bed?" he cried out in a hurry.

A hazy memory painted with smear hues and ragged edges followed him, putting me on the bed. However, why was this done? I don't recall anything that happened following. I forgot about the bedding and raised my hands to my neck.

Did you nip at me?

I felt a severe discomfort in my neck. I was just able to recall that.

I had been sleeping for too long to wake up.

"Shit!" To brush his fingers through his hair, Erick released my hand. Down his face, too.
"Shit!" He said it again. So sorry again. I should have known, but I didn't.

"Erick." I cautiously touched his shoulders. "What's going on?"

"You're frightening me,"

"A vampire injects venom into a woman's bloodstream,

He hesitated before stating, "After coupling, it starts the transition process."

What transition specialist—

My eyes widened as the realization dawned.

"You're turning into a vampire," she said.

Chapter 33

Alina

"You're turning into a vampire," she said.

I didn't believe the words had fully sunk in.

Currently, Erick was talking on the phone at a breakneck pace.

I was sitting on a

I sat on our bed and looked at my hands as if I had suddenly discovered the solutions to what

They will never forget what occurred tonight.

For me, this was a first. I would never have maintained this level of silence in the middle of a storm. Normally, I would just pass out, but today, I had an odd urge.

I was unable to comprehend what had transpired.

I have no idea when or exactly how long it will take for the words to sink in.

"You're turning into a vampire," she said.

"Alina?" Erick's tone was cautious and soft as he spoke.

A scared wild animal that appeared peaceful at first but might suddenly erupt into a hissing monster.

I turned my hand over and told him, "It hasn't taken, Erick.

"I'm not sure how I should feel."

I apologize. All of this is my fault. Faced toward me, Erick sat down on the bed. Next to him, his phone displayed an ending call from Miaka. "I ought to have

I've supported you in every way possible.

What happened the night before? I queried. The period following our kiss

It was cloudy. There were no visible signs of the bite, though I recall it.

It.

"I placed you down on the gazebo once I got us out of the pool." However, "Then I got a mental call from Miaka," he continued, "which was strange," considering that Miaka never requests assistance and that I was under strict orders.

Preventing anyone from bothering us for the evening. It found out that Emiel had forcibly entered the fortress.

I shrieked. "Emiel! Is everyone doing OK? Is Miaka doing OK? The

I was horrified at the prospect of Miaka in Emiel's hands. I was aware of Emiel.

Although he was a youngster, Miaka wasn't a human. Thus he didn't harm humans for some sick, twisted reason.

"Stop worrying," Erick grinned at me briefly. "We lost around 11."

The security personnel believed Miaka had arrested Emiel. She is more robust than she, As it seems.

Oh, thank God! I exhaled in satisfaction.

But that seems to have been a diversion," Erick continued. All along, you were the target.

"Me? How?"

Fang traces. He tenderly stroked the side of my neck. It's almost time.

Even though they're gone, I can still make them out. While I was gone, someone put vampire poison into your body. It was either Kendrick or someone incredibly powerful. The moment he sensed something, he would have let me know. Even the vampire guards posted outside the home were unaffected.

But who might be powerful enough to avoid security? I queried.

"Erick?" He appeared to be in distress.

Do you recall what Miaka said to you regarding the mages? Who established the dimensions?"

"Yes."

The Ancients is the name for them. It's widely believed that they didn't pass away during production, contrary to what everyone thought, Erick, claimed.

Instead, they're just dozing off. It had been a protracted dormancy that could only end when they prepared to awaken.

But how does that relate to my getting bitten? Unable to see the connection, I questioned.

The first indication of awakening is when a person becomes possessed. "A human turning is the second.

Finally, it made sense.

"The first indication was Emiel!" That's why he appeared to have a

"He seemed to have two personalities living inside of one body," One said. And

The second is me.

"Yes," Erick responded. As soon as you mentioned Emiel's eyes to her, she said, "Miaka made the connection this evening." "There were vampires with Emiel during the attack, and they all had red-glowing eyes," a number of them said tonight.

Why would an old wish transform me, though? My hand,

My instinct was to grab for my neck and touch the region where the pain had been most intense.

Even though it vanished by this point, talking about it made me feel tingly.

The decision "may be made at random or extremely carefully." Not all Ancients were there.

The individuals who contributed to the creation of the dimensions did so voluntarily.

Or since they had concern for their citizens. Some of them wanted to be in charge and

"Lead the entire world without opposition." He clarified. "Most likely,

I'm the one who awakens with the desire to conquer this world. And because we are always watched over and protected, we could not possess royalty.

He or she chose the second-best choice.

"I see. Thus, "My body briefly became numb when the world in front of my eyes suddenly went black.

"Alina!"

The blackness persisted even after I opened my eyes and could feel my hands and feet again. My senses gradually returned, and I felt Erick shaking my shoulders. The edges of the darkness were tattered. My vision slowly came back, and I could see Erick's anxious face just a few feet away.

Far from my own.

"Erick?" I raised my trembling fingers and touched his side of the face.

What took place?

Your transition, please. He slowed down. I noticed a certain level of powerlessness.

He immediately hid the fact that I instantly recognized something in his voice that I had never heard before.

"Alina, get some rest. It will benefit you.

I simply nodded, feeling too exhausted even to think. I gave a thoughtful response before closing my eyes and falling asleep.

It was common for me to awaken in the early morning to the sound of waves breaking on the shore, but this was the first time I had done so in the middle of the night. I opened my eyes to see the bed cold but still warm. Erick must have just awakened. The digital clock by the bed. I pronounced it to be 3:49 a.m.

When I raised my head to glance around, I discovered Erick occupying a large window sill in the castle bedroom. It was pouring in the moonlight. He was bathed in a gentle bluish-silver

radiance, as was the entire space. I brushed the sleep from my eyes and got out of bed as quietly as possible, trying not to wake anyone up. I retrieved a robe from a nearby chair's back and put it over my head. Short evening gown Erick wore a grey t-shirt that hugged his body over black trousers. His features were all sharp angles and slender, and his body was like a second skin.

In the moonlight, muscles.

I tried to call him when his head was turned away from me, but his

At that same moment, his hands encircled my waist and pulled me down onto his lap as I

I made an effort to contain my squeal.

"You caught me," Obviously, he did. He was, after all, a vampire. Erick laughed as he turned to face me and encircled my waist with both arms. His face was buried in my hair as I encircled his shoulders with my arms. Your breathing shifts, and you say, "I heard you before you even woke up." I woke you up.

I frankly said, "I couldn't feel you next to me." How long

Was I awake?

"A day." His hold grew firmer. However, it's good. To counteract the effects of the venom, I'm injecting you with my blood. You ought to get some rest.

Throughout the whole procedure.

A blood bag by the bedside was now empty, as indicated by Erick. Hung from a pedestal with IV tubing wrapped around it in different directions. Will I eventually resemble the Ancients? I questioned, terrified for the first time because I had finally gotten beyond my first disbelief at being in transition.

No, you'll remain the same. He raised his brow and inserted a little

A tender kiss on the forehead. Just a touch more powerful, vicious, and seductive

I laughed while breathing in the shadows and nestling my head beneath his chin. He had a chocolatey, somewhat spicy fragrance. "You have a dark chocolate scent.

"Oh?"

I scowled as I regarded his face in the air. "You weren't aware?"

"Vampires are unable to recognize the odours of other humans." To us, it essentially

"They all smell the same,"

A few loose hairs were placed behind my ear by him. But We're also the world's most dangerous predators. Our odours have been modified to draw in our prey.

Do you mean small girls with huge blue eyes and short dresses when you say "prey"? I grinned.

Instead, he kissed me, submerging me in a sensational pool that sent heat through my body. He only parted when I was limp and gasping for air. Then he said, "I think it's time you find out," in a calm voice, into my ear.

"I eat my prey in this manner."

He had a very attractive manner of pronouncing the word "prey." He dragged the Y over my skin in such a seductive manner that it seemed like the gentlest of strokes. He placed his mouth once again on mine. I immediately felt the plush bed sheets on after he lifted me in his arms.

Both of Erick's legs were next to mine.

He pulled away just to come back a split second later without the shirt. He bit

I delicately tapped my bottom lip, which caused me to gasp. He profited and pushed.

He was within, his tongue tangled with mine. His hands extended the suffering by

In my nightgown's thin silk, I was caressing my nipples. A ripping sound accompanied by cool air brushing over my skin caused my nipples to bud. I quickly realized that I wasn't wearing underwear, but I didn't think about it as Erick removed my bottom lip from between my teeth. And made a sucking noise as it was released.

His hands roved over my breasts, down my body, and me.

They didn't stop until they reached my hips. He jerked up as though startled, looking down at his hands, and I automatically squeezed.

My thighs tensed up more.

My lower body was submerged the last time we had a sexual encounter. It was different this time. This time, he had a clear view of me. I wasn't accustomed to feeling so helpless. It seemed more passionate and desperate in some way. However, I was aware that Erick would never change no matter what.

It hurts me in every way imaginable.

I shut my eyes firmly as I felt Erick come back to kiss my neck. He

I paused briefly just below my jugular vein before continuing lower.

He stopped at my breast and used one hand to mould and squeeze my nipples. He swallowed the second nipple whole in his mouth. He suddenly gave a little bite. On an island, My back arose off the bed as my eyes rolled back into my brain. His teeth merely sunk deeper into his mouth due to my nipple being closer.

In.

I flung my head back and gasped. My throat became sore from screaming.

It was excessive. As Erick drank from my breast, I felt like I was about to break under pressure.

Erick made just two long suckling noises before he let go of me.

To close the wound, he licked the area. But he didn't stop.

Instead, he brushed soft lips between my breasts and my tummy, stopping short of the delicate curls where my thighs meet. My lower body was lifted off the bed and into his mouth with a single light thrust after his hands reached under me to grab my hips. The sheets started to somewhat shred under my fisted hands as I pinched my eyes even harder. I felt my voices were torn out of me, but I couldn't stop them.

Erick's tongue encircled the delicate nerve bundle. My spine twisted.

He split my moist pleasure folds with his tongue as he lowered it to lick them.

My most personal skin. There was just so much I could do take without

My body had reached its breaking point and was disintegrating. As a scream tore through me, I simultaneously wanted to shrink away and draw closer. It was excessive. It seemed too delicate and too real. I lacked the words to express the excitement growing within me adequately.

"Stop! S-stop! A gasping protest that I was certain I had not heard.

I want him to do as I say.

He also didn't. He didn't stop. He just kept slapping me. To reach my breasts, he moved both of his hands up the side of my body. He simultaneously squeezed both of my nipples. At the first indication of teeth

After sensing my most private flesh, I was shattered into a billion pieces. My

My thoughts vanished totally.

Erick only offered me a brief window of opportunity to rest before the sharp.

His cock massaged its head at my shaky entrance. He was out with one powerful thrust.

I rode the waves of pleasure that converted me from "Blood to honey" and melted my bones. I couldn't believe I was about to experience another orgasm just after the previous one.

My internal muscles tightened up around his hot, firm length. Even as my stomach began to go queasy once more. I soon discovered that I had my second orgasm of the day. I faintly remember hearing myself as the universe erupted around me in a whirlwind of sound and sensation. I could also hear the bed linens ripping, but I was too lost to care. I could hear a faint male yell. As he entered me, I heard Erick calling my name. The seed he ejaculated inside me was warm.

Erick carefully backed away and approached me to kiss me.

My body continued to tremble from the effects of my orgasm as I rubbed my forehead. My fingers entwined with theirs as my hands let go of the torn bedclothes. He rolled over and put more of his weight on me.

On the bed next to me, I passed out.

I immediately widened my eyes and gazed up at his lovely face. His lips were slightly stained with blood, and his hair was stuck to his forehead. His eyes were lit by the brightness of the beast inside of him. OH! He did bite me—down there.

Although I should have felt humiliated and ashamed, I didn't. All that was left was the utter satisfaction of having been claimed by me. I ran my hands up my husband's arm against her and untangled our intertwined fingers.

Up his broad shoulders, into his soft hair at the nape of his neck, and throughout every ripped muscle. It was satisfying to feel him tremble. Gaining a strong grip

My lips touched as he bent his head closer to me. After we parted ways, he raised himself on one elbow and inquired, "Are you OK?" "Is there any pain anywhere?"

It was challenging for me to explain how it felt to discuss this with him.

Immediately after what had occurred, although it wasn't unpleasant. It appeared as though we had a deeper, more personal link. I said, "I'm OK," pulling the covers over my chest. I may have still been a little.

Being exposed in front of him felt uncomfortable, but it was just a question of time.

"I'm happy," He straightened my pillows, gave me a tiny smile, and then.

I properly wrapped myself in the covers.

He reclined on the bed beside me and wrapped his arm around my shoulders. Waist. My hand was on top of his as I sank farther into the pillows. I then shut my eyes and drifted off to lovely sleep.

Chapter 34

Erick

"How is he doing?" Without knocking, I entered the throne chamber rashly.

Kendrick with me. My father was talking to his friend when I arrived.

broad, Vishal

"In the prison cells." We were simply making our way there to be questioned."

The father spoke calmly, but I could tell that he was enraged on the inside. Emmanuel and

Ten of our best guards had been killed by his henchmen.

"The troops?" Kendrick enquired of Vishal.

Vishal answered abruptly, "Disabled." "After then, they were of little use.

The influence diminished. We're going to offer them over to our Lord tonight.

They would die in the fire if they offered sacrifices to the Lord.

Constantia. Hades will be offered their blood as a sacrifice. That was a wise decision. After being possessed, they were no better than rotting vegetables. Stronger vampires like Emiel could handle possession far better than weaker vampires who couldn't. "Why do you people keep acting that way? He despises making compromises."

As Miaka entered the throne room, we all turned to face her.

Today, she was dressed in her regal attire, a night-black gown that swirled like a black mist around her ankles and elaborate vine-like jewellery.

Her elbows were cuffed in gold jewellery. Her hair was in crimson ringlets around her face, and a locket talisman that the Demon King could only wear lay on her chest. Its centre, a blue diamond, was vibrating ferociously.

It is tradition, a disease. She received a tiny bowl from her father, but it wasn't

She was the Demon King, but only because she was a true demigod.

Despite her best efforts to deny that Timika is the daughter of two gods, she is a unique person in her own right.

Hades was one of them, but I wasn't going to tell her story.

Traditions are designed to evolve. She grinned. But that's not true.

I'm here to talk about just that. Back home, I've been asked to come."

Are you departing? Disappointed, I questioned. We didn't do that very often.

I need to see her immediately.

Sadly, brother, but I'm sure you'll run into me again soon.

Remarked with a smile as she approached and encircled me. "Until then, yes." Her little frame was encompassed in my arms, and I

Her head's top was missed.

My father said, "Let's get this conversation over with," following Miaka.

Left.

I said, "I'll go," to him. Who knows if he is still under compulsion?

He was also here to divert my attention. It will be better if I handle him. personally."

He gave it some thought and then answered, "Very well." "You may leave."

I exited the throne room with a deep bow, and Kendrick was right after me. Behind.

"How is Alina?" Ken mutely enquired.

Unconsciously, I said. She entered a stage of transitional slumber. She is being cared for by my sisters. She entered transition sleep this morning, which was beneficial for her. Every

organ, cell, and tissue in her body would be going through a shift. I didn't want her to experience such suffering. That was the main reason.

People who were about to fall asleep.

But the question on everyone's mind was whose venom was coursing through Alina's veins. I gave my blood to her for that reason. That would mitigate any negative effects of that dreadful substance and aid in transferring some of my abilities into her blood. Having her be there was all I wanted secure. I verified how I was connected to her. It was a delicate, bright link. Her vitality, which arrived soon after our wedding, vibrated in our thread. It was still standing strong and getting stronger every day. I prayed for God to protect her from everyone for the umpteenth time.

I managed to make it through the transition stage unscathed. Two armed guards opened the large metal doors at the dungeon entrance. There were several more guards inside. While some lurked in the shadows, others were out in the open. Emiel was segregated.

He was confined to the last cell and was iron chained to the walls. I desired

But his father changed his mind.

We went down the steps to the basement level and were

There was a cell for Emiel. Small cells were used to prevent overpopulation.

However, they were securely locked, allowing the guards to detect odd behaviour.

To give us some solitude, the guards stationed in front of his cell walked away but not far enough to hide us from view. The wall had Emiel bound to it. His hands were covering his face.

Which he set on top of his lifted knees. Weapons of any kind have been ruled out.

He had only been given a pair of white slacks to wear before being abandoned. One could tell from the first-class wounds on his body that he had received.

Therapy for breaking into the castle and murdering ten royal guards. He examined

The only thing visible as we stopped in front of his cell was the heavy iron bars. Dividing us is.

Without wasting any time, he started talking right away. "How is Alina doing?"

She is not a concern of yours. I snarled in response, ready to rip out his heart with my claws had to make fists out of my hands.

I refrained from wanting to murder him.

Emiel appeared pitiful in this condition. Initially, he was never particularly powerful.

As demonstrated that evening, four years ago, when I declared a duel with him. and he utterly failed. I became the crown prince that night. After

Where I wiped off the Nile and the rest of my friends for betraying me to Emiel, he realized his limitations and understood he couldn't defeat me. He did this by choosing to use his intellect rather than his abilities.

Hunched down in his chair, he finally declared, "I never wanted the throne." pain.

After everything you've been through, pardon me if I find that hard to believe.

"Done." Gritted teeth were used to push out the words. Who are you employed by?

for?"

"I'm afraid I can't tell you." He made a horrible noise. As soon as I talk, I'll pass away."

Why do you think I would care? I cocked an ear and crossed my arms across my chest.

He whispered, "Because you care about Alina." "Because

I give Alina my best."

My eyesight was obscured by red as I lunged at the gates. Nonetheless, I couldn't

Five shadow guards charged me as I smashed the bars to claw at him.

And, upon Kendrick's order, held me down. Whenever it was still insufficient to

Ken approached and took a position before me to keep me still.

He said calmly, "Erick, you have to calm down. "Or I'll

I must do it.

I snarled, "Do it," with a passion that was far from peaceful. How could he?

I called her by name! Vampires were notoriously violent when they first mated. Mate-protective in nature.

Ken sighed, closed his eyes, and started chanting in the dialect of

The Old People's skin began to shine subtly in red, and one detailed pattern that set magic apart from humans became a clear focus.

I felt a sudden peace come over me, and I immediately stopped struggling. The guards took a few more seconds before letting me go. Ken stopped chanting when the light vanished completely. When I turned around,

Emiel was trembling with fright. In total horror, he murmured, "He's a mage."

Yes, of course. Kenneth grinned. "If not, why do you suppose I

Could you command a squadron?

"Now." I gave Emiel my full attention. "You informed me about the motives for preserving your life."

"I wasn't expecting how it turned out that way." Huge eyes and obvious fear could be seen in Emiel. She doesn't hurt me, so I don't want to hurt her.

But...

But Emiel, what? Tell me at least The reason they turned Alina if you aren't able to give me a name." Despite my strong tongue, I controlled my anger. Firmly restrained.

He simply and tremblingly answered, "A vessel."

My blood became ice cold.

Alina

With a start, my lungs burned as I gasped for air as I awoke.

I cannot see clearly.

To relieve the pain, I reached for my throat at once with my hands, but someone quickly took them away and kept them by my side.

I continued to gulp. My body thrashed as my back arched off the bed. I could breathe once again and feel my lungs fill with air.

Slowly, the environment around me came into clear focus. It took me some time to comprehend that I had returned to the castle and that those holding me captive were

Susan and Athena.

What happened, you ask? My throat was as parched as the Sahara. You must be thirsty, so come here. Calm and meek Putting out a glass, Susan. In my mouth. The aroma made my mouth thirst, but my brain rejected it immediately.

It.

"What's that?" I gasped and covered my mouth and nose with my hands.

It is blood. You must consume this before you can eat.

Anything else, Athena asked while soothingly stroking my hair with her hands.

I was once more reminded that I wasn't human.

My eyes started to tear up suddenly. Eventually, the truth caught up with them to me. Even though I knew this was imminent, I was no longer human.

Everything has happened too quickly and soon for me since I accepted my destiny as a vampire's wife. Not at this time. I didn't want it.

"Alina?" Athena gurgled. She attempted to cup my face, but I resisted. Hold when my breathing becomes shallow.

I pleaded with them to go.

Athena immediately sprang up, grabbing Susan's glass and setting it on the nightstand. Susan, though, paused for an additional second.

"You may leave." From the doorway, Erick's voice could be heard. Here I am.

now."

Susan nodded before leaving with her sister, leaving Erick and me all alone. He arrived, closed the doors, and sat beside me.

He extended his arms to me and said, "Come here." Allow me to hold you. I came voluntarily and clung to him for dear life while I sobbed. Flow. Even though Erick remained silent while I sobbed, his silence said a thousand words.

I later confessed to him, "I'm terrified."

It's acceptable to be afraid. You're going through something.

entirely fresh." Behind my ear, he tucked my hair. But I'll be with you the whole shift, she said. "He gave me comfort and held me securely.

Up until his grip became intolerably tight, I felt secure.

"Erick..." His arms tightened over my neck like steel bands, and I gasped.

Waist. I'm struggling to breathe, "E-Erick!"

A horrible voice that combined two They truly do Male, and Female voices said, "That's what I want, sweetheart,"

Something nasty and guttural.

Erick wasn't doing this! The voice wasn't Erick's at all.

"No!" The bones in my arm began to fracture, and I yelled as a result.

a sharp headache discomfort

I drew my head back and gagged at what I saw. In the face of Erick, Only the bones and the flesh remained. Blood seeped from its empty eyes as tendon and muscle hung free. Eyes

that were glowing red. That is the last thing I can recall before my ribs break. Crushing my lungs and stabbing my heart.

Chapter 35

Alina

I abruptly woke up. My lungs felt like they were about to collapse.

My body felt even worse, and my eyes were on fire. It seemed like I had been moving quickly.

Hours long. I was in so much pain that black patches obscured my vision. No! I closed my eyes and gritted my teeth as I endured the pain.

Strength. It took a while for it to pass, but I resisted falling asleep.

My body began to cramp, and as I moaned in agony, my hands went to check if my rib cage was intact. It is still. There was no way Erick would attempt to harm me. Therefore I had to be dreaming. Surely, that was a nightmare.

Relief flooded in from the inside as I sensed the mating bond's pulse in my head. Erick was close by. He needed to be.

I quickly blinked, only to discover that everything was foggy. I was scared. I swung my hands about, trying to get a hold of my location. That said, as one sense fails, the others become stronger, but in my situation, it wasn't true. My senses all appeared to have been dimmed. My hands made a loud impact. Is that wood? That item was dropped to the marble floor from a higher surface, perhaps a table.

To shatter into a million bits. The noise broke the silence and

I could hear it echoing all around me. It was too noisy for me to understand.

I yelled while covering my ears with my hands.

While I was still shaking, the door swung open, allowing someone to enter. Into my bedside, hastily.

My voice came out raspy and unclear, "Who is it? Who's there?"

When I growled, he lowered his voice and said, "Alina, it's me, Erick."

Once more, I have my hands over my ears. Is your vision foggy or opaque?

Hazy, I exclaimed. I'd like to touch your face.

With one hand, I reached up and grabbed Erick's. He led me to his house.

Instead of flesh and blood, I felt like I had warm skin with a thin beard. I drew my hand back, relieved but uncertain because my vision was still blurry.

And once more stroked my chest.

I extended my arms once more, reassuring myself, and he embraced me.

His dark chocolate aroma surrounded me as he hugged me tightly.

I felt a feeling of serenity rush over me.

Athena just informed me that your heartbeat turned off; are you OK?

The graphs. Were you dreaming at the time? He asked, "Are you in pain?"

My face was in his hands.

I grabbed his cheeks and said, "Yes." I was experiencing a nightmare. "My body feels as if it is about to erupt.

To run his hands up and down my arm, Erick moved his hands.

I'm sorry I couldn't be here with you, Alina. Was it bad? "I blinked. "I saw you. You were attempting to soothe me as I was suffering a panic attack, but you weren't there anymore, trying to kill me."

Erick's skin tightened across his cheekbones, and his eyes grew sterner.

Alina, I'll never hurt you. You're aware of that, right? "

I rubbed his chest with my head while closing my eyes and saying, "I know."

I would encircle him with my arms. "Did you question Emiel?

"

He nodded, his grip tightening around me in the briefest of moments.

"Have you injured him?

"Even though my vision was still blurred, I raised my head.

He even questioned me as to whether you were OK.

"It's alright. He laughed. I would assume he was sincere if I didn't know any better. However, I am aware that he is acting with ulterior motives and that I know better. "

"What if he was sincere, though?

"I inquired; you already know this.

Even you couldn't stop yourself when Emiel used his compulsion on you. Just imagine how challenging that must be for him. The person who tried to hurt me that night wasn't Emiel; it was someone else. "I was aware I connected with him, but I needed to persuade him that Emiel wasn't the enemy. He was only one more victim.

"Alina, I know what you're trying to accomplish, and it's not working.

The link we should've had as twins was broken as soon as he was gone, and we have never been brothers or agreed on anything.

By Marcellus' offspring entered."

"Erick, you've never been permitted to be brothers, and you're the only one who can

Change that, I said, despite Erick's head shaking in protest. "Can you image the grief those ladies must have felt having to give up their own children to someone else without even seeing them?"

After they live with their rage for the rest of their lives!

What, for a simple-minded kid?

What if it's our child next, Erick? Will you sacrifice one so that two can live? Is it a sign?

Can this bloody foolish prophecy come true, and would give up not hurt at all?

Giving your opponent a piece of yourself will enable them to sow the seeds of anger on your behalf.

I know I won't be able to take a small mind for the sake of a prophecy!"

My vision gradually began to return as I gazed into his eyes with a sudden

Although I could see clarity, I could not see compassion or understanding. I was aware of myself.

He didn't understand what was being said.

Was it indeed impossible to get him to identify Emiel as his sibling?

I'll never forget how he made me feel, despite what you're saying is true.

He mistreated me, and I'll never be able to forgive him you. How are you going to forget all the

How often did he attempt to kill you? Which cliff? Your residence? Do you not?

His tone had changed from calm to furious, "Remember any of that?"

Repressed rage.

I agree, but Erick, he was—

"Possessed?" He asked without irony. Guess what, Alina? Even though I was forced, I overcame it; else, you would not have survived.

Since I had nothing to respond to, the stillness that followed his comments was lethal. But I was certain we were missing a sizable portion, and I was determined to learn more. Having to make a

Erick is aware of reality.

A knock was heard at that precise moment from the door, "Prince Erick."

He replied, "Yes," before turning to face the door.

The speaker, most likely a guard, responded to Erick, "Master Aaron is come to see the princess."

"I'll be right there. He assured me as he turned to face me.

Get some rest, Alina. I'll talk to Aaron. "But Erick—" "He paid no attention. I was left flabbergasted as he simply got out of bed and headed out.

I whispered something to the space, "I thought you swore never to hurt me. Yes, it hurt a lot. It was painful to watch him simply turn away from me. a Terrible lot, particularly when he was determined to disregard his obligation to Emiel. And in maintaining their conflict. I had to take action. Unless Erick would

Consider reason... Emiel would then be required to answer.

I yelled, "Ken!" hoping he wasn't with Erick at this time.

I believed Erick may have left him behind to keep an eye on me. Thankfully, a moment later, he popped his head in. Why did you call Alina? "

Edward Erick

"What brings you here, Aaron?

"When I arrived in the castle's residential quarters, I questioned.

Like all the other rooms in the palace, this room had several paintings hanging from the walls and exquisitely crafted tapestries. Several vases were scattered in different directions holding flowers freshly cut from the palace gardens. In the corners of the room, "Greetings, Your Highness!

"Aaron got out of the chair and

Before standing up straight and giving me direct eye contact, he bent his head. "I'm

To see my great-granddaughter, I'm here. Doing well? "Aaron was her Family, after all, and he deserved to know the truth, so I decided to give him the truth. I told him everything; about my possessions, the situation, the bite marks on Alina's neck, her transition, and the part we played.

When I understood there was no good in Emiel, she wanted me to see it.

For a very long period, Aaron just sat there and said nothing.

He stared at the table in front of us without blinking until he finally groaned and ran his hands down his face, saying, "I want to take her with me."

"What?

"Blood boiled in my veins at the prospect of being separated from Alina—nobody can take her from me!

Aaron said calmly, "Think about it, Erick." "This

The last thing she needs after her transition is your disagreement over Emiel. She should relax until it's all finished. She is quite frail.

She will continue to put her health at risk while trying to persuade you that Emiel is innocent as long as she is close to you. Allow her to accompany me so we can have a few days to reflect. "

After hearing what he had to say, and had to concur that he

He was right in so many ways: it might be good for us to be apart.

Additionally, Aaron was not only the head of the Cain clan but also Alina's great grandfather; he would ensure that she was safe; he would defend her from any threat at all; I could trust him with her life; I could trust him with my heart.

However, I also couldn't ignore the reality I couldn't let.

Would it be OK to let her go, especially given we had that unresolved quarrel just now? After all, she was my wife, my better half, and she was mine to protect, argument or no argument.

"Erick, what have you decided?

"Aaron's voice pierced the din.

I was aware that I had to decide, and I knew I had to make it in the solitude my thoughts had created.

It was an order, and any roguery would be severely punished, Family be damned. "Keep her safe for me."

Aaron nodded, "You have my word, of course."

It was a difficult decision, but maybe the distance would assist us. I stood up from my chair and moved toward our room.

This indicated that the Ancient knew where it was going before Cain did.

It would help me maintain secrecy because the opponent might not even be aware of the home.

She's secure while we figure out how to kill an ancient, but I couldn't help but feel guilty.

I was convinced I would do something bad and couldn't shake it.

Standing in front of our bedroom door, I shook my head.

I needed to think of the situation as an If I were to become king someday, I would let my love for her be my guidance.

"Alina?

"I opened the doors and discovered that the space was empty.

"Alina?

"Had she visited the restroom once more? I questioned.

I noticed the bump on the bed, but the door was wide open, so if she were inside, she would. I would have responded to you by now.

I'm sure I fell asleep.

I sighed since I didn't want to wake her, but Aaron was impatient.

Sending her off now was preferable to delaying her departure for an indefinite amount of time.

I had an immediate question: Why couldn't I hear any breathing? When she lingered longer in the castle and drew nearer to peril.

I hurried over with vampire speed and tore the bed's covers off to see

A collection of pillows arranged to resemble people.

"Alina!

"Fear briefly held my heart in its frigid fingers.

Before that, I had a gut punch of realization.

I teleported straight to the dungeons, slamming the doors shut behind me.

Alina

As Ken took me through the process, he commented, "That was a very bad notion.

His arms encircled my shoulders in the dungeons to support me.

I excused myself, saying, "I know, but that's all I could think of."

Additionally, it might buy us some time.

Ken replied in a hopeful tone, "Let's just hope it works," and brought me to a cell at the end of the hallway.

"Emiel?

"I shouted, thinking he would at least hear me this time.

"Alina?

"a difficult voice sounded from within the jail. A torch lit up.

Emiel's shape was visible because it was shackled to the wall.

"Why did Erick allow you to come here?

"

"He refused. I choose to come here on my own. "Ken stopped me as I attempted to put my hands on the bars because I knew it was all I was capable of.

I stayed safe from the bars while still being close enough for others to hear me speak.

I was weak, but I could go to him.

"You're going through a transition.

"The moment he saw me, Emiel's eyes grew wide.

What if I am possessed once more, and you come here, Alina?

"Will they make an effort to hurt you?

"

"Emiel, you won't be able to. Magic holds the bars in place. "That

There wouldn't be any threats to the populace. Kendrick had assured them of that.

"Listen, Emiel, I need to speak to you," said the man standing outside the cell.

"Are you certain? Alina, why did you come here? You should be aware.

He said in a little voice, like a child, "I realize how dangerous this is."

He recognizes that he made a mistake and is repentant.

In so many ways, his actions and facial expressions were infantile.

That he could be the brains behind anything was inconceivable.

I put a palm on my chest and said, "I know you won't hurt me.

You must assist me in this because I know it in my heart. Could you explain why? Are you so against Erick? Why did you force him to commit such heinous crimes?

Me?

"

"Wish I could explain to you. I do, sincerely, but I can't recall. Anything! It's like... me When my mind goes to sleep when I'm possessed while someone else sees through my eyes... and speaks through my mouth, he sounded perplexed and unhappy with himself.

He was describing something that was genuinely awful. It must be accurate.

Being unable to manage your thoughts and behaviours is agonizing while

Someone compels you to act in unimaginable ways. While the globe won't

Is there anyone besides you? I couldn't imagine how Emiel could endure that. How

Even so, was he sane?

But there's something you need to remember. None exists in you.

Recollections? No recollections coming to mind? I was careful in my inquiry.

Emiel! Anything that enables us to assist you. "

"Do you want to assist me?

"His contrasting eyes were fixed on

They held both fear and hope. "Yes." I would assist him even if it meant defying Erick because he was unaware of Emiel's suffering.

Possibly it will be too late when he finally acts.

Kendrick waited beside me, but I refused to let him aid me. I needed to do this on my own. I knelt before the prison cell when my body could no longer support standing up. My energy was slowly being drained while my body was being turned into that of a vampire.

I questioned Emiel, "Tell me," as a thought came to me, "Should you not?

If you remember being possessed, why did you act as you did?

Erick responded that I was fine. How did you determine whether I was injured or in transition? "

Emiel remained silent for a while, appearing more terrified than

His voice hardly raised above a whisper when he spoke—the lowest I'd ever seen him.

"He tells me that's why. Whoever this person was, he told me everything I did and everything they forced me to do until I was no longer possessed.

To make him feel this terrified, they must have used severe brutality.

When I turned to face Kendrick, I saw him staring at me with wide eyes. This information must have been more than Erick was ever able to share.

About Emiel. This individual had to be the one assisting Emiel by

He is backing him up with a vampire. Thus he must be the one assisting the Ancient.

Then I looked back at Emiel. You need to give us a name, Emiel.

Who wouldn't be uncertain, as Emiel appeared to be? The individual was

Even I am beginning to get scared by it. Possessing him first, then letting him know that

Did the world know that Emiel committed the crime? That degree of powerlessness is beyond my comprehension. I, therefore, encouraged him till I no longer saw dread in his eyes.

"His on—"

"Alina!"

Erick suddenly materialized in front of me, and I jerked back from my posture. I

To my knowledge, he teleported for the first time, and it was a genuinely spectacular sight. The

The air around Erick solidified until it became the form of him, but the rage in his

I immediately averted my attention when I saw the eyes. I could not bear to witness his feelings of betrayal. However, I was prepared to stand up for Emiel and myself if necessary.

But whatever hopes I had of getting a smile out of him were dashed by what he said afterwards.

I am aware of the circumstances.

It was an order: "You are to depart at once; your grandfather is come to take you to the Cain family for a few days." It was audible and clear to me.

However, Erick

He gently lifted me off the ground, saying, "Do not empathize with her, Kendrick. She had brought this on herself.

I was in front of my great grandfather the next thing I knew.

I was being handed to Erick.

Erick gave the order, "Take good care of her." Later tonight, I'll deliver her items to your home.

"Come on, Alina. Aaron took me to the front. Of course.

I glared helplessly at Erick in return.

I was escorted to Aaron's car and placed in a black sedan's passenger seat. Aaron got into the driver's seat and started the ignition. I looked back at Erick through the rear window, but his face held no emotions. He did nothing except observe, acting like a statue I drive away. Why was he doing this? Just because I spoke to Emiel? Why Wouldn't he give up his hatred for him? But I was too exhausted and helpless to fight back. The

Kendrick went out the home door and towards Erick as we were leaving, and Aaron ran ahead and into the car.

He picked up the pace.

He's here, Alina, he's here!"

When I heard Ken yell out the words, my eyes widened. Realization

I turned to face Aaron, smiling sweetly at me, when it hit me like a bullet. I gasped in response to a pressure injection that struck my arm immediately after. After that, I fell asleep while still hearing Erick's voice in my head.

ALINA!

Chapter 36

Erick

Why didn't you warn me sooner, darn it!

Why didn't you let me know? me?" The table in front of me split in half, spilling its contents on the ground. Glass broke into a million shards of various colours.

"That's because you constantly become enraged by things.

Emiel, who blinds you to reality, is involved. You simply don't take any other advice!" Ken never before yelled at me, but he did so now. I didn't care, though, since I was too angry.

"Kendrick, he took Alina!" I grit my teeth. "My connection to her is broken." I don't have another means to reach her because it immediately stopped working. Ken, she could be hurt! Why didn't you alert me when scumbag uttered a single word?"

"Erick, are you even paying attention to yourself?" That trashy object is

Your brother attempted to warn me while putting his own life in danger!" Ken exploded.

"He collapsed on the ground gasping as soon as he told me about Aaron.

Blood of his own! The healers advise a brain scan because he hasn't awakened since. Haemorrhage. But Erick, tell me this. Would you have trusted Emiel's story?

Even if he revealed Aaron's name to you? How much did you trust him?" I clenched my teeth against the cloud of rage and balled my hands.

I made an effort to move on. After a long period, I responded to Ken with, "No."

Silence. Aaron was someone Alina shouldn't have had; he was like her family. Had to feel fear. Now, my cousin Alina was being held hostage by the same cousin. Moreover, I had no way of locating her.

Once it passed the main castle gates, the vampire guards pursuing the automobile could not find it. They appeared to vanish into thin air. And that might

This can only suggest that they had a mage on staff. The ability to make something so large completely vanish without leaving behind any scent trail could only be possessed by a mage.

Ken touched my shoulder with his hand and jolted me out of it.

These are my ideas, and I've tried vainly to contact Alina through our connection. Erick, I believe Alina was correct. He is but one more victim. It won't be simple to start trusting him because I know you two have been adversaries your entire life.

Once more, it's not just the two of you anymore in this. Just do it for Alina.

"Assist Emiel in getting her back."

I needed time to overcome the disgust and let the wrath pass, but I could think clearly once it did. "Instruct the guards to search every crevice of the Cain estate." I gave the order to look for hints about where they might be. "Take the

Get them to start working on Emiel. I require him.

Make sure he can't escape his cage; he should be well within an hour. As of now

I don't know if Emiel is possessed, so please advise everyone to exercise additional caution.

how to approach him

Alina

When I heard an engine roaring shut, I jumped. It was first extremely.

I have trouble opening my eyes. Initially, they felt burdened and unwilling, but then.

My eyes and mind quickly flashed over the cause of my unconsciousness. It suddenly opened. As I looked ahead at the moonless night, I watched a train pass. Our vehicle.

I took a peek at myself to evaluate the situation. Trying to

We used our bond to try to get in touch with Erick, but there was no response. Looking out the tinted glass windows, I could see that we

They were in a deserted grassy area with no houses to be seen and only a railway.

Automatic equipment on the track in front of us had just raised the bars to let us pass through

Oh, good, you're awake. I was startled to see my great-grandfather occupying the driver's side of the car as I glanced to my right. "This place was growing lonely." I

I detest the stillness. I don't enjoy feeling alone, making me feel that way."

My hands were bound behind my back when I tried to sit up straight.

"What made you bind me? Where are we going together?"

You're such a wonder, granddaughter. He gave a headshake. "Your

You know, my mum was the same. She was the one who questioned everything. She passed away because of that. What a shame. She might have been very useful."

My gut was filled with dread. My body became numb from The subtext of what my great-grandfather was saying was that I was aware of it without him explicitly saying so. "You murdered her,"

"Of course! Obviously, I did "Aaron remarked with a full heart.

Every sentence is infused with energy.

One fine day, I contacted her and explained everything.

I was thinking of you. She was originally supposed to be the vessel, but it.

She appeared to have some vampire blood still. You were entirely human, on the other hand, so that was the difference."

"She was your granddaughter, so why did you kill my mother?

I failed to grasp it. How was it possible for him to murder his grandchild? Why?

She was going to try to stop me, so that's why. Aaron started the car. , moving forward. "She intended to forewarn the king. "How could I just ignore that? What happened? This and all the other Ancients would be exposed and destroyed if I was discovered. That was not intended to occur. The Old People

They are responsible for dividing the dimensions and forming the worlds. It was them

The selfishness of the races nearly cost them their lives even though they were born to govern.

They will now rise once more and take back their reign. It is not

Whether or if they are covered in another person's skin. Their hearts will remain unchanged. same."

Is that what a vessel's purpose is, then? Hold a different soul? "If

What would happen to me if it were the case? I was aware of the solution.

I questioned him even though I already knew the answer to that query. "Yes, and your soul will naturally pass away." You will vanish amid such tremendous strength." He then grinned. But,

The future? He might even preserve your life and grant you the privilege of

Stay inside your body with him. You can't be sure. Ah! Here we are."

I wanted the ground to give way and swallow the car and me completely.

Amid nowhere, it stopped. The smell of death permeated the very air in this area.

We were in a field with miles of uninhabited space on all sides. The peculiar thing was that a thick forest hid this meadow. Vast grassland is present on one side and the other. Additionally, a meadow at a

A location like this wasn't out of the ordinary, but one this large undoubtedly was.

Aaron commanded the passengers to exit the vehicle. I had no idea of that.

He had exited the truck." Don't try to flee either. It is useless. For kilometres in this area, there is no woodland. In addition, there are probably a few hundred.

Predators out there would savour the opportunity to feast on you.

Even though the entire area was noisy, I jumped out of the car without hesitation.

I wanted to get away from it as quickly as I could. There wasn't much to do.

I have a decision to make. If I wanted to have a chance of leaving this place alive, I had to obey. "What brings us here?" I inquired as I surveyed the deserted area.

"Dear granddaughter, wouldn't you like to meet the Ancient? I know

He can't wait to meet you."

The air in front of us began to move and ripple, and my eyes widened in dread. The meadow's little bushes and grasses soon formed a massive structure. It must be quite old, but it is still really wonderful. The

The temple's carvings narrated long-forgotten tales of conflict and civilization. Not all of the creatures that drew inspiration from the monuments were vampires. It appeared to be isolated by a sizable mountain. Other species were also depicted in relief on the temple walls. My thoughts, though, were rapid.

The stench filling the air is more beautiful than the monument, which overshadows it. The noise couldn't be emanating from the few dead animals around. This could only imply that there were dead people within the shrine.

Most likely, both vampires and humans.

"Let's leave." My hand was taken by Aaron, who drew me inside. He was an experienced vampire, and I was still transitioning, so resistance was fruitless. We ascended the stairs and entered the main hallway, where I gasped at the smell.

I apologise for the scent. Recently, Tuhin has developed a bit of greed. While he didn't particularly enjoy the cleaning crew, "As he took me upstairs, Aaron replied. "inside a bit more.

"Sire."

Aaron was stopped in his tracks by a woman's voice. As a group, we awaited

In front of us, a woman materialised and bowed to Aaron. The lady

It appeared that she was in her mid-thirties. Her hip-length black hair was lengthy. And it has a front braid to keep the hair out of her face. She reminded me of Aaron because she didn't like him for some reason despite being related to him and part of his tribe.

She lacked the otherworldly beauty that a vampire was known for.

She wore a black trench coat, leather trousers, and a black shirt. within her

I was wearing a necklace that was nearly identical to the one Aaron had given me.

I was still wearing just below her temple, on the left side of her face.

The mark was dark. However, it appeared to be a snake slithering down her cheek.

The mark had a quality that prevented it from seeming to be a tattoo.

When you see it, you'll recognise it.

Mage! A mage, this woman was!

"I see. How are things doing with the spell?" Aaron queried. "We can start as soon as her change is complete. It's ready.

"Perfect! Watch out for the barricades. I'm going to introduce Tuhin to my great-granddaughter."

"Sire." Isabel lowered her head before leaving along a different hallway.

"Erick will track me down," I said as he started dragging me along behind him.

My legs weighted lead. "The next king will be him. He will undoubtedly locate me. Then you will be held accountable for your actions!"

The moment he pushed beyond a pair of enormous wooden doors, I fell to my knees, choking at what I saw beyond.

"Are you blind to it?" He spread his arms out and grinned like a lunatic. "You were created to accomplish more. Who is interested in Erick? Who

When will it only be a matter of time before we become royalty? Who cares about the royal bloodline?

Get rid of them! First, get rid of them. Now, not much longer. The

Once your metamorphosis is complete, the transfusion will start.

Nothing will be able to stop us."

I hated becoming a vampire for the first time in my life.

Chapter 37

Alina

I watched in dread as the monster on the throne moved its head. To stoop to look at me. This monster was made of flesh and bones, just like in my dreams, but his condition seemed far worse.

The eyeballs' hollow regions were filled with maggots that crawled out.

Out of a gaunt face, looking. The muscles and skin hung loosely on the exposed areas of his physique. A steady trickle of blood was dripping onto the ground.

And it was soaked through his clothing. However, the number of dead scattered around him was the most terrible aspect. Trying and

At the sight of the half-rotten bodies of hundreds of men and women, spread by the monster's feet with their hollow chests, I could not keep the bile down my throat and ended up retching. Their callous bodies were revealed as their rib cages were split open like egg shells.

"Your hunch is right, my wonderful grandchild," I said. As I heaved myself up, Aaron came to stand behind me and pulled my hair out of the way.

"Tuhin consumes the hearts of vampires in order to survive, but this will not ensure His longevity. Soon, he'll require a new body, and fortunately, we have you. merely a moment late. Your transition is almost finished right now."

"H-How?" Even as my chest heaved and I struggled to ask

Acid's taste makes the mouth bitter.

Oh, you're asking how Tuhin and I are related or how he got here to be alive? Aaron enquired with a smile. I'll respond to both since I'm in such a nice mood." He crossed his legs while sitting in the chair.

Front of the monster. The mass of muscle and bone kept casting eerie glances our way with sunken eyes.

I stood up from where I had been reclining and leaned my back against a wall.

I maintained the greatest possible distance between Aaron and myself. I had to; we are aware of this. I had to understand how I was related to this monster.

Why was I selected to be a vessel? But above all, I had to get in touch with Erick. My head was still filled with it, and he must be anxious and sick at this point.

I noticed a dense mist that obscured my view of our connection.

Aaron said, "You see, "The Fi Astros, the Five Mages, or the

They were the most potent mages, known as The Circle of the Supreme.

In the language. There hasn't been anyone who can match their level of power up until now. After the division of their clan, when everyone thought they were dead, their clan kept them alive by using passed-down spells.

Passed from one generation to the next. For a very long period, our clan was together, but

We became vampires throughout the time when vampire blood was infused into our tribe. Until a few of us lost the ability to utilise magic. When we became aware of the danger, we only included mage members of our clan strictly. We encouraged

So that we would never run out of mages, we interbred whenever necessary. It was The first time our ancestor opened his eyes after roughly a thousand years had passed. We gave him the vampire heart because he was craving one. though those

He couldn't hold on for long; his heart wasn't strong enough. Every time I tried to put him back to sleep, the lack of power caused him to lose a little more moisture. If this continues, it won't be long before he's gone. So, we devised a design for a ship. The problem is that vessels don't endure very long after being bit. They never reached this point. But you're unique because you succeeded."

A shiver ran down my spine as he continued to stare at me. He was

How ironic that I've always thought of Erick as the predator, even though he's done nothing to convince me that I'm the prey. I questioned, "What about Emiel?". Even though my breathing was almost normal at this point, I was still bothered by the cloud. It continued to obstruct me.

Preventing you from contacting Erick. "Did you make him compel Erick with force?"

"Of course! I did." He responded with joy. "We desired

Not your mind, my love, your body. The easier it would be, the more we could break you.

Your usage as a vessel would have been intended. We intended to damage your soul, but You emerged from the experience stronger than ever, and our strategy failed. Then we considered allowing you to grow close to Erick before we

He was murdered in front of your eyes. It was a great strategy. that small.

What sort of cliff-drama happened to you? All of that was part of our strategy. But someway,

Once more, the pitiful vampire made it. I then appeared at that point. and presented our family jewellery to you." He indicated the pendant I was wearing. That was giving out a gentle radiance. You didn't believe it was a random necklace, did you? Tuhin once owned that jewellery. His spirit was led there by it.

He got his venom into your bloodstream with your assistance.

My hands immediately reached out to me as my eyes widened in dread.

But the following instant, a high voltage of

My hand's skin was immediately burned off as electricity rushed down my arm. I screamed while holding my hurt hand in my other hand and watching it begin to mend. Assuming it moved more slowly than Erick's rate of recovery. But suddenly, the necklace let off a stronger glow and electric sparks.

Danced all over the sapphire's surface.

"Ah! I should have told you. It's impossible to remove it anymore, at least not easily.

"till Tuhin removes it from you. Aaron gave a handclap motion." Now,

Where had we been? I see, Emiel. A poor little boy." He shook his head, but his tone said nothing to suggest that he was genuinely feeling regret. "We started taking over his brain a little too soon. His mentality suffered permanent harm as a result. He simply behaves like a spoilt child with no intelligence at all." He made a shrug. "Oh well, we were considering getting rid of

In any case, he left. Now, Erick will certainly kill the king if the former does not."

I found it difficult to close my eyes after feeling bile rise in my throat once more.

By pure force of will, it fell back down. Aaron wasn't just using Emiel as a puppet. He permanently injured him, yet he has no remorse for the

The destruction he has wrought, much less the lives he has claimed. He was a true

And worst of all, he knew it very well.

What's in it for you, exactly? I asked despite my intuitive feeling.

It continued to stir. What do you gain by assisting him?

"Of sure, take over the Dark Council." His grin got bigger. "The

The eleven realities are under the control of the Dark Council. If I can manage it, I will have control over not one but eleven worlds if the Dark Council is successful."

They won't let you win so easily because "The Dark Council is the protector of the dimensions!" As I defended, I considered little Miaka and the

At my reception, I ran into twin Lycan cubs. No, not if Tuhin pursues them! I have to stop that from happening.

Oh, what a poor kid! Aaron laughed. You are ignorant of half the facts.

You don't have to, but the Dark Council does. Once Tuhin assumes control,

I'll get rid of every single council member with your assistance. Don't worry about your cute little brain for the time being. There are barely a few hours left to live, after all."

I attempted to hold onto our mating connection to let Erick know where I was. Even though I didn't know anything, I had seen the area around the temple. It might be something Erick has seen before. I couldn't allow it to happen because the closer I went to finishing my transition, the closer I came to taking control of my body.

Edward Erick

"Consider, Emiel! Something must exist!" I begged. If I had to ask Emiel right now for any helpful information on how to get to

Alina, Yes, I will. I would never let my pride get in the way of me.

Alina was my heart, mate.

About a half-hour ago, Emiel woke up, and I had given him enough.

Before questioning him further, I allowed him some time to recover. I had no idea how.

He gave Alina so much, but there was one thing I was certain of. I refused to allow my rage to dictate how I behaved because it was getting in the way of the truth.

Any longer. We had to cooperate if there was any chance that we could save Alina. The only good news was that Emiel appeared just as ready to assist.

The royal forces thoroughly examined the Cain clan estate but found nothing.

I have a left hand. It appeared as though the entire clan had vanished down the mountainside, without a trace, Earth. Additionally, every one of their known relatives has been located. But we couldn't think of anything. Their history with the clan was extensive.

Since falling apart.

"If I had any information, I would have told you by now," Emiel He strode around inside the cell, sounding equally angry. My hands grew tighter against the bars as I roared deep in my throat.

Sufficient to dent them. Using every tool at our disposal, we have It's been put to use. Every avenue was explored, and questions were asked of all conceivable relations. No, on second thought, there is someone we've forgotten.

"Allen!" Kendrick, who was standing in the middle of the

At the first sign of aggressiveness from Emiel, he is prepared to strike.

Sheena's husband is Allen. Kendrick understood right away. Therefore, Allen automatically joined the Cain family. I turned to face Emiel. I'll try to absorb all the information I can from him. There's a chance Allen's

His illness has compromised his memory, but Sheena likely told him he had something in the interim. Try to recall anything important from the items."

I exited the dungeons and went to my room so I could discretely teleport to Allen's hospital room.

"Can I believe anything he says?" Kendrick posed the crucial inquiry.

The same doubts existed in me, but"

I was tasked with giving Alina another.

Chance. I was handing it to him, hoping for Alina's sake.

She made the right decision."

I entered my room, shut the doors, and sat beside my bed. I closed my eyes and focused on recalling the specifics. Of the hospital bed in Allen. Because I had already memorised the specifics, it wasn't challenging. I was in the centre of the space hospital cabin when I opened my eyes again. Allen had a book hanging from one arm and was staring at me with wide eyes through his glasses.

He questioned, "Erick?" with a tone of surprise. Who or what are you?

What are we doing here exactly? Alina is missing."

I tried hard not to say, "I needed to speak to you immediately."

I can't talk about Alina's condition too much. It would negatively impact his

If he found out Aaron had taken Alina, he would be worried about his health.

What do you need to discuss? I approached Allen's bed and set the book on the nightstand as he took off his spectacles. I had an uneasy feeling that this was serious.

I was honest with him. "There were rumours of an ancient awakening,"

He needed to be aware of the small particulars to assist. "Are you aware?"

Any information about it? Have you ever heard Sheena say—"

"It caused Sheena to pass away!" I was shocked by the audible rage in his voice. Allen was the most unmovable person I've ever met, so I was shocked to silence.

"Allen," I said, moving cautiously, "if you know..."

Please inform me if you discover anything. If there are any, do inform me of the possibility.

Fighting off an ancient.

"The evening..." Allen inhaled shakily as his heart rate increased.

The display. We were at the Cain clan manor the night of the accident.

After years, Sheena received an unexpected invitation to the estate. She was quiet.

"I'm glad to be here," His eyes were watering, and he drew another trembling breath.

"That day, Alina would join us, but she backed out. Those of Cain

That Alina wasn't among us infuriated me."

"Then? Allen, what happened next?" I softly prodded him by putting my hand on his shoulders. I need to know, Allen.

He shook his head while shakily dabbing at his eyes. "I

I'm not sure. I wasn't allowed to accompany her into the room because I was

After an hour, Sheena fled the room in a panic, looking pale and terrified. She

They kept saying that we had to return home before it was too late. Although it was on our way home, I couldn't grasp what she was trying to tell me.

The big truck slammed into us. It wasn't an accident. I'm certain of that. It was a targeted killing."

However, why would they wish to kill you both? Neither did you

Enter the chamber now!"

That is the exact reason I am still alive. They sought out Sheena, and

They were willing to kill their relatives to silence her."

His spine was made of steel, even though his hands shook. "Before Sheena

She warned me that a primordial being would emerge from a hail of blood and flesh.

Not until now did I understand what that meant. I can now state with certainty that Sheena was killed." At that very moment, he turned to me and pleaded while grabbing my hand

"Erick, please don't let it damage Alina. "Please keep my infant secure."

Despite the frost in my throat, I said, "I will." But you must convey

"In case there is anything further, just let me know from that night that you can recall."
What an Aaron, which astounded me but was of no use. I required more, so I

I require it now.

Yes, she had stated something else before passing away. His brow furrowed. He was experiencing memory issues. "It was

"Something involving a blade

It ended there! That is just what I required. "Allen, get moving! You

I have to take note. Identify it for me."

Allen focused intently for a lengthy period, and my Hope gradually diminished with each passing second. No! I needed to hang on. I needed to bring her back. Not from me.

Without becoming a monster, I won't be able to survive without Alina. "I recall!" Allen's voice abruptly interrupted me to make sure I was thinking clearly. My heart swelled with hope once more.

Tell me, you. I pushed while holding his hand.

He uttered, "The Arctic Blade."

Chapter 26

Alina

It was already after five when I woke up, and Erick was nowhere to be found. After giving him my blood, I was exhausted, so Erick allowed me to take the day off. On the other hand,

he was forced to leave to see whether Emiel was aiding him by giving him the necessary weapons.

All we could confirm by this point was that Emiel had escaped from

No one in their family could locate Marcellus' line of ancestors.

It appeared as though he had vanished off the face of the planet. We were, however, certain.

He was confident that he was receiving assistance because one person could not behead eight members of the Royal Court on their own.

Guard. Who could it be, was the question.

I quickly showered after getting up and changed into the black jeans and pink coral top that had once again been laid out for me. Kendrick was standing by the bed with an orange juice glass when I exited the bathroom, leaving my hair behind. I looked at him. "Alina, you've already given him a lot of your blood. If you gave him more, you wouldn't be able to stand up. For me to consume, he extended the juice.

Now, behave well and enjoy yourself. Just orange juice."

I took it all in at once, not even realizing how thirsty I was.

Who is Erick?

Your presence is also needed "downstairs." There is someone you ought to meet."

"Okay." Kendrick appeared to have had TimeTime to take a shower and shave.

"How is Mia doing?" What about the additional vampires that hurt Erick?"

Mia will be alright. Within a month or so, her arm will recover. He

He appeared anxious. "We located the vampires, but they were all already dead when we arrived. To eliminate any evidence, Emiel must have done it.

or..."

Or whoever is assisting Emiel did it themselves, making it impossible for us to identify them." After completing for him, I rubbed the back of my neck. "What about the occupants of my structure? What about my residence?" I wanted everything to work out. It had been my haven for four years, but I knew I couldn't even as I desperately hoped I could return. Not if

I wished to continue living.

They are fine. They have no memory of anything." His expression told me.

Even before he said it, I already knew everything I needed to know. "as of your residence,

We're bringing all of your possessions here because it's no longer secure.

Go there. You ought to. Everyone and Emiel are familiar with the location.

Who would desire to drink from the future queen?

"Okay." I inhaled deeply to make myself feel better. I edited a journal.

I ought to have grown accustomed to my environment constantly changing." So,

Who exactly am I supposed to meet?"

I said, "Your great grandfather."

Whoa, what?

"You are not my great grandfather," I said.

Kendrick looked at me as Erick snorted while suppressing his laughter. My great grandfather, standing there with wide eyes, arched his brow. An attractive face that could easily be that of a Calvin Klein model. Without a doubt, the man in front of me was a vampire. How is that possible?

Was I a vampire's ancestor?

Erick began, "Alina," and stood next to me after rising from his seat. He put his hand on my lower back, reassuring me, "Aaron Cain, the head of the Cain clan and a member of the vampire nobility, is your great grandfather. His son actually got married to a person."

"Oh." Although Aaron Cain appeared to be in his early 30s, there

He exuded power in the background. He had a handsome face and jet-black hair. Square-jawed face with chiselled features. At almost six feet tall, he was very tall. I have a build to match my height of six feet. It was difficult for me to accept it. We were related, he said. Why didn't my parents ever inform me of this?

While I got my brown hair from my dad, he has the same shade as my mom. I guess I resembled him in terms of appearance when My mother resembled my grandmother more. Therefore, it was obvious that we were related.

Aaron addressed me for the first TimeTime, "Kamia." He spoke

It could keep the interest of a whole room because it was husky and deep without the need to increase the octave.

"Huh?" I was on the fence about asking him what he meant as I just regarded him. Did he just call me names?

It's in vampire, the old vampire language. Hello, he said.

I had laughter in my head as Erick translated for me.

I said awkwardly because I was at a loss for words. I felt like

I am currently perplexed. According to what they said, my mother and I were both vampire descendants. Was her success due to this?

Connections to Kenna?

"Alina, you resemble a true Cain more than your mother does."

I was unable to identify his accent.

'But how,' I queried. "I don't get it," I mean...

Human blood serves as a diluting agent. Erick was the one who spoke. "If a human and a vampire had a child, the child will be of mixed ancestry. If more human mating is permitted, a child will one day be born wholly human."

It also occurred in my family, she said. After, Aaron picked me up.

Erick. "The last person to consume a tiny amount was your mother.

She has vampire blood. She appeared more like an immortal as a result. You, however, my great-granddaughter, are entirely human. The purity line

With you, it came to an end. But it has to start with you as well." You will act as the

"After all, a royal bride."

"Alina?" When I would've tightened my arms around me, Erick did

I knelt on the ground.

"I believe I should sit down."

"Sure." Erick led me to a sofa and sat down after taking my hand. I don't like it. He then sat down next to me and wrapped his arms around me.

Once more, "Are you alright?"

I was selected as your bride for this reason, didn't it? I said,

"It was my fault.

"The noble family was descended from my mother."

Yes, that is the reason you were selected. Erick attested to it. This Cain

One of our most reliable allies is the clan. Observations by parents have been made for

We support one another when we are in need. Wishing to make something of their friendship

Therefore, they decided to set up this union between their kids so.

Their friendship can develop into a relationship, and their line can be purified once more.

Bloodline connection.

Is that true? I was unsure of why I had suddenly become depressed. Finally, after all these years, I realized why Erick chose me as his bride. Despite this, I didn't feel happy.

Erick said helpfully, "Alina, Aaron here wants to give you a gift." bringing me up against his body.

However, there isn't a need to.

Aaron interjected, advancing a velvet box and saying, "It's a family heirloom."

Forward of me. It has been handed down for many years. "This is now yours to keep. On your wedding day, wear it."

"I'm grateful," He gave me the box, and I noticed his nod of approval.

He turned to me and said, "I'll see you tomorrow after the wedding. "I'm going to go, son," she said. "Be sure to look after her. "I will." Erick grins. Do you know when she will arrive before you leave?

Some say tomorrow, but I believe she's already arrived, said Aaron.

Before stepping outside, Erick's hand clung to my waist for a brief moment before being released.

Are things all right? When I noticed frown lines on his forehead, I questioned.

Yes, nothing to be concerned about, Erick said with a small smile.

I have never seen a smile that was that manufactured period.

Erick laughed loudly. In reality, Alina, it's nothing. He did

He drew me toward the kitchen while I was holding his hand. Tomorrow, "You'll Know," everything. You must eat something right away, or you will "Faint."

My tummy growled in agreement.

You won't be attending a bachelor party, are you?

The whiskey Erick had been consuming comes close to being spit out. Do you think I went to a strip club with my closest friends and ate the dancers' food?

When you put it that way, though, Too late now. I observed

The sly grin of Erick and the sparkle in his eyes

"Although there isn't a bachelor party before the wedding, there will be one after. I've made a few friends by the TimeTime you've met everyone else. I already know that you two will never be apart. by Jordan's spouse. She hails from a noble family as well and is a tornado. She will win your heart."

I resisted the urge to learn more about her relationship with him after being shocked by my jealousy. Why did I feel jealous of a woman I met suddenly?

Never met and already married on top of that?

Are you worried about what you learned today, I hear you ask?

About the reasons I picked you to be my bride."

I gave him a wide-eyed look. How did you find out?

Your face is covered in writing about it. You're in pain." He made himself another whiskey glass.

The word "hurt" wouldn't be appropriate. Rather, it sounds like "I'm shocked."

So I told him. It's just a feeling that I have, I don't know. I don't believe I

I am aware of how I feel about the situation." "Hey." One of my hands was taken by Erick. Making the most significant life decision has given me that feeling for a long time. Predetermined. I couldn't stand you for such a long time because of it. I didn't understand how much you meant to me until I hurt you." He gave the back of my hand a brief kiss. "Please be aware that whatever our

It was no longer required, the family decided. I picked you to be my bride.

I wouldn't be devoting this much TimeTime to it.

What was his secret? How did he consistently predict my moods so well?

When did I last experience depression? How did he know what to say to me and when to leave?

Is it being said to make me feel better? I'm experiencing a mental overload.

I struggled to speak for a while. Simply put, I was at a loss for words.

I chose to concentrate on a different subject. "Would you recommend that I wear

Is the pendant Aaron gave me at our wedding still intact?" I still had a hard time coming up with

My great-grandfather is him.

Erick set the empty Glass on the table and replied, "Yes. the desk before us. Erick and I arrived on the terrace following an early dinner. to unwind with a glass of wine and the cool breeze. In the case of Erick, it was bourbon. "Royal or noble family pendants and rings have unique properties. They not only safeguard those who wear them, but they also make your social standing obvious to everyone, deterring any unwanted attention. They are unique and covered in some sort of spell or another form of protection. So,

Undoubtedly, you ought to wear it at all times."

But what makes them unique? I posed the previously asked question.

Since my ring saved me from Emiel, are you going around in my head?

Are they constructed of a unique metal? Is it not—"

It is magical.

"Pardon me?" Did Erick Stayton just say "magic"?

"They are indeed ancient artefacts made specifically to store magic.

Spells are used to sealing them, defending the wearer." He picked up his half-full Glass and drank from it while closely observing me.

"Spells?" I furrowed my brow. What about witches?

He clarified, "Mages," he said. The term "witch" was created by people. They identify as mages. They are unique individuals with mysterious and exceptional powers. Just as religion separates people, covens divide them.

Some of them will be introduced to you tomorrow."

How can I tell whether or not it's a mage? Do they resemble us? "I

Intrigued, I inquired. This may be the most intriguing piece of news I have heard in a very long time. The witches existed! What a cool thing!

"Yes, everyone does, but there is a clear way to tell.

The Yorick purposefully prolonged the tension.

Any part of their body can be marked to accomplish this. You'll be able to distinguish it from a tattoo even though it almost looks like one. Every mage is required to wear their coven's and family's mark.

It aids in our ability to identify them."

"What magic do they employ? Do they employ crystals or voodoo dolls?

orbs?"

"No way! What in the world gave you those ideas?" Erick scowls.

"Simple physics and energy transformation are employed. Earth is comparable to a Mages can direct that energy.

Remove it and use it as necessary."

I was in awe as I just stared at him. Damn! Okay, drop it all at once. This was like returning to Supernatural Kindergarten and asking, "What the hell did I get myself into?" I'll handle it. No need to worry."

Erick started laughing loudly, his voice being deep and husky. "I seriously doubt

"Faintest."

Oh, stop talking! The nickname he gave me made me flush. If only I didn't constantly pass out in his presence. "Tell me now, please!"

"You have waited this long, my favourite Alina, to learn about us.

I'm certain you can survive another day in this world." He drew me in by placing an arm around my shoulders. But the closeness persisted.

I didn't feel the least bit bothered. You'll receive a synopsis of the

"Tomorrow during the cleansing, the entire story."

Oh, I should have asked. Who will perform this ritual of purification?" "My mom." He grinned. "This serves as a reminder that the ceremony is tomorrow morning, so we must arrive early. We ought to get some rest." Erick stood up and extended a hand to me.

"You are correct. Tomorrow is the big day." I also got up.

You have a private space all to yourself tonight. Tradition dictates that

Before the wedding, the bride and groom didn't interact, which was

Everything was going smoothly until Emiel got involved." He made a backward head scratch.
Tomorrow morning, we'll travel together, but Ken will take you in a different vehicle.

It's alright. I'll see you then tomorrow." I finally grinned a little.

The wedding blues are weighing heavily on me right now. Papa would be so much better off being here with me today. Will Papa be alright while we're gone, I wonder. "Ken rotates our top security personnel. "As of this morning, they have been doubled. I promise not to allow anyone to harm Allen." voiced Erick.

He was powerful and relentless.

"I'm grateful,"

I don't need your gratitude. Awaken and rest. We must stand up.

Monday morning."

Your Highness.

Sleep well, Princess. Erick pressed a feather while stooping.

Before turning around and moving back, I quickly kissed my lips.

Saying good night

Chapter 38

Erick

Polar Blade?

Mom made the same shocked noises as Dad. "I'm not aware of any.

Son, what a blade. The elderly historian has already been questioned, but he

Do you know what it might be?"

My parents were unaware that the Arctic even existed. Blade and Emiel didn't either. This brought me to the only decision I could make: the

The Dark Council is currently out of my reach. Which one was suitable?

The Ancient itself was a powerful unrivalled wizard,

"No, Ken replied, "I'm not aware of such a sword, but the

Chrome could."

I told Ken, "Merida dislikes me, the woman who is Ken's grandmother, the

She's always opposed to you joining the Vampire Royal Guard, his coven's wise old mage stated. But Ken wasn't any longer a guard. Even though he oversaw the Royal Guard, Merida Blackburn had always believed her son needed to be a much better wizard associated with the vampires. They wanted him to succeed the Chrome, but Ken had little interest. He was kept in his small tribe. He wished for a wider perspective and

More exploration Now, the grandmother in question was our last-ditch effort to bring Alina back before it was too late.

We are left with no choice. Taking his phone from his pocket, he daggers. If you give me your blood, you can take my memory of the coven's house. We are getting closer to losing Alina the more time we squander."

That satisfied me. He handed me the dagger, and I cut my palm.

I used the blade to slash myself and put my fist over Ken's so the blood would drip onto his palm. He drank from his blood-stained palm after that.

My blood stopped flowing, and the wound healed up completely. There was an instant connection. Vampires possessed the extraordinary ability to locate their blood in another person's body. It was what gave us shape. Blood links are mental ties people can have with one another, but they eventually wear off.

Once the blood had been removed from their systems, it disappeared.

I didn't need to probe Kendrick's mind anymore because he

He already had a mental image of his coven home in the background.

I grabbed it, grabbed his arm, and we both transferred to a massive

Six persons were seated in a circle near the fireplace in the living room.

When they all rose in counter-attack, Kendrick said, "We're here to see Merida."

"Kendrick?" A woman with red hair and green eyes wearing a flowing green

The clothing separated from the circle and moved in our direction. "You must be, too.

The vampire prince Erick.

Ken welcomed her, "Sarah." We're here. "Can you take us to Merida?" during a crisis."

Sarah quickly nodded. That way.

She led us down several winding paths, and we followed closely after her.

It appeared to be an old, worn-out house with bare walls in the hallways.

However, there were some areas of the house that, like the living room,

were only lightly ornamented. In front of a pair of elaborate gates, we came to a stop.

When Sarah knocked on the wooden double doors, she was approved to enter.

Like all the Magean women, Merida was seated in front of the fireplace and wearing a peach dress. The cream-coloured skin of her delicate neck shone out against her black Magean marking. Two vines wrapped around a globe and were twisted to form the symbol. Because mages mature as slowly as vampires,

Merida didn't appear to be a day over thirty. Her golden hair was neatly bunched up.

When her eyes met Kendrick's, they both shone brightly.

Kendrick! my grandchild, It's been much too long, my child. " She

Ken approached her and encircled her in his arms after she extended her arms to him.

As he separated from her, he softly murmured, "Grandmother, I'm terrified." We're not just passing through. I need some details about the ancients.

tribal members."

"Again serving the vampires as a slave?" She didn't like Kendrick's job. Her voice made it very plain.

I finally spoke out for the first time since we had arrived at the coven house, "I'm afraid it's a question of life and death."

Merida abruptly turned to face me. And why should "Our worry" be about a vampire's life? "In an angry voice, she questioned.

Mages were strong creatures. They could channel the energy of the

Magic is made by transferring Earth's energy to other objects. This is why they were constantly in demand, yet magical power has also been misused throughout history. They had been made to participate in actions against their will. Then even

I learned that captured mages might be purchased on the black market for the highest price.

Because mages may live in any realm, they desire there.

Their freedom turns into a prison. Mages from different dimensions detested dealing with other races because they were frequently hunted down for power. Merida's hostility against me is not entirely my fault. It was also why the Dark Council, our supreme governing body, extensively examined Kendrick's friendship with the vampires. They persisted.

Keep an eye on us to see that whatever Kendrick did for us was done with his approval.

"I'm afraid it's a human this time, not a vampire," Mages could

They may have detested vampires and other shifter creatures but had positive feelings toward people."

The Cain has taken my wife captive.

We worry that they might use her as a container for something ancient. "An Old One? Who's ascending?" Merida's response gave me the thought.

She is more knowledgeable than any of us are about the ancients.

Do you know that the Ancient has been reawakened?

I queried.

She said, "I'm a mage," and walked up to her workstation. I, Kendrick, and we

I followed in her wake. Merida sat down in her chair and motioned for us to take the seats across from each other at the desk. When we were seated, she started talking. "Alexander, Palatos, Verna, Shindou, and Tuhin were the

The finest wizards of all time. The Ancients are so named because they were

It is thought to have limitless power. They are so great that they survive death.

To reclaim the authority they formerly held and previously lost, that one ascended once per thousand years.

They can return to walking on Earth one day. However, rumours claim their strength and physical bodies deteriorate with each use, even while their strength grows. Small by little. A human is picked to deal with that issue, particularly one who is a progenitor of the ancient awakening. We refer to these people as vessels. The Ancient then assumes the form of a shifter and turns the target by injecting its venom into the target. Once the change is complete, it can easily transfer its soul into the prepared host."

And what occurs to the soul housed within the host? I queried.

It expires. Merida spoke in a sombre tone. Therefore, you must inform them.

The name of the wizard coven, please."

Despite not knowing the coven's name, I do know the

The vampire family that abducted her, Aaron Cain, represents the Cain family.

Kendrick informed her, "This is their head.

"You say Cain?" Before her eyes, Merida appeared to be thinking deeply. The realisation grew. "Of course! The coven of Cracovia. They are Tuhin Cracovian's offspring."

"So, Tuhin is the ancient awakening?" I requested confirmation.

"If it's the Cracovian clan, then absolutely," she replied. I believe it to be

Tuhin. He is said to have gotten along well with the blood demons.

We are vampires' evolutionary forebears, Merida declared. Yet, how do you?

Are you planning on killing the Ancient?

You want to murder him, right? I inquired, perplexed. "He is a mage, isn't he?"

Merida deadpanned, "A mage who has outlived his usefulness.

If you don't, he'll come back to life after a millennium, and if he does,

He'll want us to all bow down to him once he finds a suitable vessel. I brought up this.

Since I'm just getting started, I don't want to go off against an established wizard. Suddenly believes himself to be God."

She essentially asked us to eliminate her rivals to benefit her. This time, it seems like we share a common adversary. Therefore it works for me. This unanticipated partnership may help us fortify our relationship with the magicians.

I will murder this, but for that to happen, I must know where the

The Arctic Blade, I believe.

"The Polar Blade? Who informed you of it?" Her shock was obvious.

"That is unimportant. You just need to let me know where to look for it." It is not that simple. The Arctic Blade must be earned; it cannot be purchased, "Merida informed us. According to rumours, one of the most sought-after valuables around the globe. All kinds of species, not just vampires, pursue it.

But nobody has been able to locate it thus far. Some people have even passed away while confined inside them. The Kamagaya Ice Caves are situated on a river that runs through the caves. It is claimed to be a sacred sword made into a weapon by the Gods.

Giving to the wizards. However, it killed when it got into the wrong hands.

The Gods imprisoned them in the middle of a river after taking hundreds of innocent lives.

The flow of which dates back centuries. Only those with sincere intents have any chance of discovering it. Think you're capable?"

"I do know where the location of the Kamagaya Caves is. I walked away from

I got up from the chair and faced Kendrick. "Ken, could you proceed to the

"A fortress all to yourself?" I couldn't waste time getting ready or teleporting Ken home right now.

"Yes," Happy hunting, Erick. Bring the sword back so we can kick around some.

"Antiquated ass."

You got it. I hugged Kendrick and then walked away to get ready for the teleport.

"Wait." When I was about to teleport out, Merida stopped me, and

He gave me a spade. You'll require this, she said.

When Merida mentioned I would need a shovel, she wasn't joking.

The Kamagaya Caves were getting smaller by the minute as I desired.

Then the wind blew, causing me to become numb. The

It didn't help that he had nothing to wear. I was wearing only a dress and a silk shirt.

Which, in these cold dungeons, meant almost nothing. About three hours after arriving at the foot of the Kamagaya Mountains, I started the walk up despite the storm outside. Removing any telepathic lock from the cave entrance. The

The northernmost point of Sanctum was where the Kamagaya Mountains existed. I used only my bare hands and feet to negotiate the 400 feet of a steep slope. And without using any trekking equipment. I could only cross with a shovel. The mountain's most challenging terrain. My hands were stained with blood.

Even though my shoes were almost completely worn out, I completed the hike and arrived at the cave's entrance. I used my night vision even though it was dark in this area of the earth.

I dug a chunk of ice out of the cave's lining with the shovel.

As I moved through, I emerged from the wall to make it wider. The barriers kept shutting.

It was almost hard to squeeze through as they surrounded me from both sides. Even the most typical immortal would find it uncomfortable. Claustrophobic. However, in the past, this wasn't always the case in caves. Thanks to all the treasure hunters, the doorway was wide enough to conceal an army.

The caverns didn't take long to begin declining. To reach the mountain's core, the route descended dramatically. Why so many people died while looking for treasure in this cavern makes sense. For a vampire, climbing This slope is too steep to get back up. Thank goodness I could teleport away else.

My train of thinking was cut short as I noticed a huge, solid wall.

There was a whole block of ice.

I must protect Alina!

I thought to myself as I drove the shovel deep into the wall.

But all it accomplished was to remove a small piece of ice. There were also side walls.

I couldn't use my full strength because it was too narrow, and I couldn't teleport without it.

I was familiar with how the opposite side seemed. I, therefore, ploughed my shovel through the

I had repeatedly made an earlier one.

Finally, I noticed a fissure in the mysterious object. I tried it once more. I could have a better view of what was happening on the opposite side of the wall after something hit and a hole appeared. In, I teleported.

Because of my slip and fall on the ice, the other side was steeper. I instantly stood back up and started moving forward till I

They came to a stop and discovered a huge hole on the floor. Water seeped out of the It tumbled into the cave as it rolled through the aperture. The river must have started here.

I squatted down and peered through the gap seeking a spot to hide.

But could not discover any. I leapt down, leaving everything up to fate. I transported to a secure location just in case, keeping an eye on the earth below, before resting atop a stack of bones. The river formed by the melting mountain's ice was then visible.

Having formed inside the mountain, it didn't have much current, but it did appear to be deep. The water was crystal-clear and clear, and

Ice made up the banks. On the riverside, I discovered several skeletons, and

Additionally, several of the bodies had been preserved by the ice. They

Once summer arrived in the northern hemisphere, it would decompose, but for now,

They'd take a nap in the snow. I peered about. The was nowhere to be found.

Polar Blade

I bent over the table's edge, watching to ensure I didn't lose my balance.

I reached out and immediately withdrew my hand. Why could it? Is it possible for the water to be cooler within the cave than the air while remaining liquid? The icy waves didn't, however, weaken my resolve.

I jumped into the water without pausing to consider how chilly it might be.

I swam as quickly as possible in the direction of the river's centre. Ice crystals started to form on my skin, and my entire body went numb, but I wasn't giving up. Not up yet. Specifically for Alina. Before she went through her change, I had to reach her, or I would lose her forever.

I poked my head through the water's surface to check my surroundings.

The weapon was nowhere to be found. I was still unable to see anything. Oh, dear! I punched the water with my fists. There was no way that was a lie. This time is searching for something that doesn't couldn't have been wasted. Even though Allen's memory of Merida was hazy, she wouldn't lie to me. She might

She may despise vampires to her heart's content, but she wasn't lying.

"No. I can't just give up now, "I spoke to myself aloud. " I excused myself.

All this effort for nothing. I must visit Alina right away! I must protect her."

I quickly dove beneath the water once more and started looking.

With newfound vigour for the sword. I decided to walk deeper down the river and look for the river bed after rising once more to fill the air. And if that weren't difficult enough, the temperature dropped with each stroke I made.

Downwards. I was blind, and a beam of light from the river's bottom shone into my eyes. I had been aimlessly striding through the desert for months when I came to an oasis.

I swam to the source of the light and reached out to grab it. I grabbed it with both hands when my hands landed on something substantial.

With all of my remaining might, I yanked it up. Immediately following the

On my third try, just as I was about to run out of air,

I broke the surface by swimming back to the top as quickly as possible.

I came to the surface, raising my hand above the water and struggling for air. The

The sword was entirely formed of ice between the hilt and the blade's tip. It was

It appeared fragile and was heavier than any other metal sword. However,

The surface of the blade was emitting an ancient power hum.

Telling me that it had been sealed in this lonely location for ages.

My hunt was at an end. I was holding the sword in my hands. I had only one mission on my mind.

"Keep going, Alina. I'm heading your way." Back in the castle, I teleported

Chapter 39

Erick

"Erick!" As I returned to the palace's throne room, Kendrick and my mother stood by my side.

"Lordy, Erick! You're chilly!" Next to me, my mum knelt.

On the ground is a slumped figure.

"No, Kendrick, we don't have time. We must depart immediately "So I told him.

As I gathered the strength to stand up again, I held him. "Emiel, you're also coming.

"Me?" Eyes wide in amazement, Emiel inquired.

"Yes." Just now, I consciously chose to do it. "Having been

Their bitch has been with them for a while. You might be useful after all."

But Erick, we still don't know where Aaron's hiding place is.

Kendrick made a mention.

"I think I can help with it,"

Take the guards, Erick.

We are unable, Father. We cannot afford to lose that much time if we travel by road and take the guards. Emiel and I will teleport inside.

Same Kendrick, and we'll return Alina to her home, "I spoke out for everybody to hear. Are you certain of the place, Mother? I can't believe I forgot about the Cain family's ancestry when I said, "Yes." but now that I'm certain, "Mama said. "Kendrick informed me about the

What did Merida give you? That temple was created in reverence of

Therefore, if my assumption is correct, the clan intends to awaken him there. But

Going unarmed there? Son, it is the height of stupidity!"

"There isn't time for us to assemble an army. Time is of the essence.

Emiel Kendrick, As I fastened the Arctic Blade to my back, I yelled for them to come toward me.

I took my mother's mental image of a temple to create a telepathic lock to teleport to once they both had a good grip on my arms.

I didn't have to feed her because we have a special relationship as mother and son. to prove the connection, my blood. After a brief delay, we were in front of a

An ancient temple is carved from a massive stone at the foot of a mountain.

I let go of their arms and moved ahead. Kendrick immediately pulled me back.

"Wait! This entire area is set up with traps. Should we miscalculate,

Ken muttered to us, "Every step, it'll notify the mage within the temple."

"A mage? Did you hear about this, Emiel?"

True, but... Emiel fixed his gaze on his boots below.

"Erick." Ken stopped me from acting by putting his hand on my shoulder. In my fury. "He is speechless. Most likely as a result of the mage's spell. That is why the first time he said Aaron's name. Blood began coming out of his ears."

"So Kendrick, what do you recommend we do? For Alina, time is racing out every second. Her transformation is about to end.

And right now, she ought to be feeble. She will make the ideal vessel." My hands were balled into fists. I felt so helpless that it was eating me up from within outward.

Wait, I have a thought, "Ken immediately exclaimed. "Since Emiel is a member of the magic that resides inside him is a component of the same magic.

It once encircled this location.

My mouth dropped open at what Kendrick was suggesting.

"Ken, no! I won't entrust him with Alina's life!" I clenched my teeth while speaking.

Erick, there is no other option, Kendrick stated quietly. "He can avoid being noticed without letting the mage know. He only needs to take them out.

Out. Can you do that, Emiel?"

"Yes." Emiel turned to face me after giving Ken a nod. "I apologise."

I'm sorry if I've ever caused you any harm. I'm aware that I don't merit the title "my

But I assure you I'll make every effort to win your favour.

Back, Alina."

No, I was not persuaded. After disliking him for 25 years, of

I couldn't simply assume he was my foe.

They would resolve the issue. But in dire times, harsh means are required. Measures.

"Go."

Emiel moved quickly like a vampire as he ran toward the temple.

Emiel

I came to a stop just in front of the temple, fully aware of where

The supposed purpose of the shield

Kendrick said that even though I could sneak in unnoticed, I was still.

I'm afraid. The holy temple towered over me like a monstrous demon; it exuded a sinister air and smelled strongly of decay and death. I was already aware of this.

The decomposing bodies that were lying inside the temple were the source of the smell.

The powerful ancient mage Tuhin had devoured their hearts and hurled them. Thousands of lives were lost when the dead were dumped into the trash like a worthless waste.

Without thinking twice. But I could not inform my brother about this because every time I tried to talk about the spell the wizard had cast over me, I was startled. My brain nearly blew up as I said Aaron's name.

I was nine years old when Aaron first brought me here. He displayed

Alina was to be the vessel that would hold this. I saw the hideous creature clinging to life by muscles and tendons.

Soul of a monster. Erick continues to pose the greatest threat to him. For them to carry out their mission and get revenge on me, I had to act as their puppet. Brother.

I reached for the shield with my hand and was relieved to see

Without being redirected, the hand slid through the air with ease. I moved ahead with assurance and then made another step. And the shield had safely contained me. I moved quickly, like a vampire. Interior of the

Although the temple resembled a maze, I had been here before and knew where I needed to go.

As he went

The smell of blood and bodies grew stronger with each stride I took. This has recently eaten. I moved farther into another hallway where multiple rooms were constructed for guests who travelled great distances to stay, turning left into a hallway where I knew the Mercenary warriors were stationed.

Go to the cemetery. In actuality, Tuhin's graveyard was the sole purpose of the entire temple. That is why keeping Tuhin's awakening a secret from the outside world was so simple.

Before the entrance to the quarters, I came to a stop,

I used all of my force to push open the door. With a creak, the door opened. The Cain mage was sufficiently startled by the loud noise. I jumped. The hired guns Given that they only took action when instructed, you might dismiss the noise as inconsequential. she would be able to distinguish it from Aaron.

"Erick?"

The speaker sounded incredibly worn out and gruff.

No, I'm the one. I closed the door after myself. At the time when I

The two candles that provided the only light, at their mercy. "You ought to be sleeping."

Do you believe that I ought to be sleeping right now? She rose from the cot on which she had been resting. "After seeing Tuhin, I started throwing up. Is Erick present?"

He is not inside the temple. If only I could go through the wall that surrounds this temple." I extended my hand to assist her in settling into the cot. To touch her was like touching ice. "He'll be here shortly."

I came to a stop when I heard footsteps outside the room. As she

She was present, yet she wasn't alone. I indicated that Alina should remain silent as I hid behind the door. After that, it started to open.

"Little one, are you hiding behind the door? Welcome outside. Before I submit you to the master, we need to have a lengthy conversation."

"I see." Even though I emerged behind the door, I didn't go outdoors. "I

I was able to escape unharmed."

Her unearthly brown long hair was pulled back into a ponytail, and

Her shimmering green eyes framed her heart-shaped face. The Isle Cain was

Second, only to her ancestor, Tuhin is she the strongest mage her clan has ever created.

She appeared to be 25 but was almost 400 years old.

She would then be eternal.

"Lies!" Her face curved in rage, and her voice went poisonous. "The prince came along with you, right? Tell me now, or I'll burn you where he is.

from within outward."

They were in when I left Erick and Kendrick outside the temple.

They can't be hidden for miles because they are in the open. If Israel failed to locate them,

If that were the case, a cloaking spell must have worked on them.

My stomach began to burn intensely all of a sudden. I dropped to the ground.

I was gripping my stomach while yelling. Israel was fulfilling her promise. Of internally destroying me.

"Emiel!" Alina was squatting down next to me when I noticed her.

Her arms encircled my shoulders, but the pain persisted. "Stop!" When the pain became intolerable, I screamed. I'll tell you, I swear.

The pain persisted even after the burning sensation subsided. Vampires

We weren't as proficient at treating burns as we were at cuts. With this burn,

It made me feel down. I stood despite the burn's discomfort. I stood up, followed by Alina, who followed suit. I gave up and put up my hands. I will let you know where Erick is. "Good." Isel grinned triumphantly.

"Emiel, please, don't." From behind me, Alina pleaded.

I said, "Erick is," and immediately accelerated to move forward.

The neck of Israel, "right behind you."

As Israel's body hit the ground, Erick and Kendrick materialised behind the mercenaries. The vampires in front of Erick were sliced to pieces on the ground by the icy sword he held in his hands.

Is that she? Kendrick questioned, identifying Israel as Erick.

I overtook Alina.

"Yes," Isel Cain is her name, and she has been around for more than 400 years.

She is extremely strong. She won't remain this way for very long." I let Kendrick know. My stomach hurt more and more as I clenched it. She burned.

Through my intestine and kidneys.

Okay, we have to.

The ground rumbled, stopping Kendrick in his tracks before he could finish.

The whole temple was shaken violently.

Alina

"Erick!" As soon as he pushed past Emiel and came toward me, I jumped into his arms.

"What have you been doing? Why did it take so long? I've

I felt such fear."

I'm truly sorry. He encircled me completely in his arms. "When only I

This would not have occurred if I had listened to you about Emiel. I consent,

I am blinded by hate.

I gave a headshake. "You are not at fault. Aaron is determined to have me so that I can serve as Tuhin's vessel. Erick, let's put a stop to Tuhin. He

He desires the Royal Family's murder. He longs to be king."

We did indeed predict that mu—

We felt a rumble in the ground. It had a quake-like sensation. The force of the vibrations caused the walls to start to crack. Dust and pieces of

All around us, the walls started crumbling, making breathing difficult.

"What's happening?" Over the rumbling noises, I yelled.

"The Ancient is required. He must be extremely irate right now." It

Kendrick gave the response. "We must depart from this area quickly because the

The temple has fallen.

Kendrick! She has left!" Emiel shouted. "Israel left!"

When we all turned our heads downward, we discovered the mage's position.

It had been left unoccupied.

She must have escaped by using the tremor as a distraction. Let's go, let's go!

Onward, we too must depart." In the hallway and outside the door, Kendrick led the way.

Once outside the quarters, Emiel took the lead, but he was limping.

Whatever Israel did to him must have been serious. Do you think she followed through on her threat?

I told Erick as he assisted me in navigating the hallways, "Erick, Emiel's hurt. "We must get him some assistance."

"Stop!" Kendrick abruptly began to shout.

We quickly ascertained the reason why.

Around us, the walls started to fall, making an audible noise so loud it hurt my ears. To drown out the noise, I grabbed them in my hand, but

My transition left my ears with excessive sensitivity.

Then a gust of wind arrived, bringing with it the smell of

Decay and demise It rose into the air and blew past us in all directions. It was dark and filled with the heartless, rotting remains of the vampires Tuhin had devoured.

My pendant started to glow a strange blue all of a sudden, and the sound of

Chanting was heard. Every direction tried to encircle us.

Chapter 40

Alina

What is she chanting?" "What's happening? Erick scolded

It is practically impossible to listen to due to the howling winds. Anything.

The transfusion spell, that's what. The tone of Kendrick's voice was urgent.

He turned to me and smiled. "Alina, your change has not yet fully taken place. Do you have any information that links you to Tuhin? A gift from Tuhin or Aaron, perhaps?"

"The pendant!" I said at the same time as Erick.

Only Tuhin, according to Aaron, can get rid of it. I made an effort, but

"I yelled at Erick as the chanting grew louder and

It's approaching.

Erick said, "I think I can pull it off," Then he drew out a massive A sword with a blade made entirely of ice. Hold the strings up.

I followed his instructions, but I withdrew my hand as sparks started to fly.

The pendant's surface is covered with a dance. "I can't. I'm terrified, Erick.

It's alright. Right here, please. Erick gave me comfort. He was really careful.

I positioned the blade's tip on my chest and swiftly pushed it under the string.

I shifted it. Prepare yourself!

At that same moment, electricity jolted through my body, causing me to scream in agony. It vanished in the next second. I looked at my chest after opening my eyes. There was no longer a necklace. It was now on the ground. Its brightness dims and loses its life. Erick used the ice blade to crush it, and

It disintegrated into minuscule crystal shards.

You have a link to Tuhin, thanks to that jewellery. Israel needs your blood to finish the transfusion at this point. Kendrick clarified.

A furious shout followed a sudden halt in the chanting. Emiel shouted, "We have to leave before it falls," as yet another wall burst into pieces.

We took advantage of the falling walls by squeezing through one to reach another passageway. Emiel led the route in the labyrinth of halls while Kendrick assisted him in the running. By now, shouldn't he be recovered? Since we couldn't use our mental connection, I asked Erick.

Emiel chimed in, "Burns heal far more slowly. "My burns hurt,"

Israel most likely has some organs.

Excellent tiny organs!

Are you even able to walk? For the first time, Erick expressed sympathy for his brother. Emiel appeared equally as shocked as I was when I noticed it. Before responding, he took a moment to turn to face Erick.

Emiel responded, "Yes, I'll be OK," and then made a sharp right turn.

Toward a small, poorly lit hallway. My field of vision appeared to be very broad.

I could see every crevice inside, making it easier to read the paragraph.

The world was no longer pitch black. Just a little bit darker blue.

"Create one line." We must finish reading this passage. Emiel, Follow Alina. I'll lead the way and

'No, Erick,' Erick's speech was cut off by Emiel. Alina needs you to stay with her, so do so. I'll lead the way. And I am more familiar with the temple than you are. do."

"Okay." Erick agreed and followed, following me, his sword in hand.

Drawn if someone chose to follow us.

First to enter the passage was Emiel, followed closely by Kendrick, me, and Erick. It was cramped because of how little the passageway was. There wasn't much room for me. I didn't see how three enormous men could fit through here. It appears that the route was As I walked, cobwebs hung in front of my face, indicating that it had not been used much. No matter how often, they just kept coming.

Emiel or Kendrick dismissed them.

As soon as he noticed a change in the air currents around us, I observed Emiel grow alert. The exit was getting closer.

A trap door was on the other side of the passage. Emiel extended his hand.

To signal that we should stop. Behind me, Erick tensed up as Kendrick prepared to attack. As soon as Emiel turned on his full vampire speed, he slammed into the door. The impact caused the door to come off its hinges and crash. Then, a rush of that nauseating fragrance poured inside to knock us off our feet.

Over the howling gusts, Emiel cried, "We're outside the temple."

"When you venture outside, be careful."

Emiel warned us of something that I didn't fully comprehend until I

Erick followed me out of the hallway as I made my exit. I first noticed a shattered rib attached to a shrunken head, a decomposing hand severed from a body, and a few detached skulls lying on the ground in front of us. The lighter body parts were carried away by the wind, but the heavier ones were stranded. Remained on the floor. Just the sight made me sick.

Erick pulled me close to his chest to protect my eyes from the scene. It

I had never before noticed how chilly and drenched his shirt was. In them, he must have been frozen.

What are these things, exactly? Erick questioned student Emiel.

Emiel replied, "Vampires. This replenishes his energy by consuming.

Hearts of vampires He ingests their abilities into himself.

That would account for every report of a disappearance we have received over the past four years. Kendrick was the one who talked.

"Disappearances?"

"Yes," Erick responded. Over the past four years, several vampires have vanished. Some vampires frequently relocate after they've

They've lived in the same location for more than five to ten years. However, they consistently leave us their

Thus, we won't ever lose sight of our population. However, historically

Numerous hundreds have vanished without a trace in recent years. I know where now.

They've left. Erick made a hand motion toward the dead.

Emiel said, his voice resonating, "We need to leave this place.

Fear of the nine-year-old child, whose mind had been repeatedly tampered with to commit such selfish crimes. He had had his mind violated. Many times.

Even though I knew doing so would give him false hope, I wanted to tell him that all would be well and he wouldn't ever be hurt again. I promised myself that I would wait until this was ended. Until this conflict is resolved, he will have to wait for the peace he deserves.

They are in view.

From behind us, someone yelled. We were surrounded by vampires on all sides a split second later.

Edward Erick

Get behind me, Alina. She was shoved behind me as I raised the

I was prepared to defend her with my life when I saw her sword in front of me.

Around us, there were at least ten vampires, and there were more.

Although they were moving, I didn't think they would get farther than twenty. Hiring any more mercenaries would be considered when creating an army, and our spies would have learned of any disturbance. Additionally, the number of vampires is

It doesn't have a lot of extra mercenaries.

I nodded at Kendrick as I turned to face him. The two vampires closest to him immediately fell to the ground as electric sparks blasted through them. Before it had a chance to rise again, Emiel seized the chance to snag a knife from a falling vampire and immediately hacked their heads from corpses. The fight had begun.

Before someone intervened, I defeated three vampires that tried to attack me.

A man attacked me from behind while slicing my back with a sword. ignoring me

I waited till the pain was felt in my brain before turning around and beheading him.

"Erick!"

As soon as Alina advised me to turn around again, I did so, but Emiel was already there. Beheading the concerned vampire. Emiel shouted, "Five more joined in." However, I believe that is all they have.

Let's go after them! I replied as I knelt, my eyes and ears dripping with blood.

"Erick! Emiel!" As my eardrums were healing, I faintly heard Kendrick screaming. Alina was standing at the exit of the building when I turned around.

Israel was there behind her when she entered the hallway, holding a dagger to her throat.

You're interfering with the transfusion. How dare you? Isel yelled. "The

Such incompetence is not acceptable to the ancient.

"You mean, your incompetence?" When I was able to stand, I told her.

Up.

"Are you Erick Stayton, then?" Isel grinned slyly at me.

What necessity is there for you to survive when the Ancient soon rules the Royal Family? Why don't I look after you straight away? "Erick!" At the same instant, Alina and Emiel both yelled.

Before I could react, someone shoved me to the ground. I felt a spray of blood hit my torso and face. Then a blade swung straight as I witnessed Emiel fall to the ground in front of me.

His mind was A few steps away. Aaron was standing with his hands raised. "Emiel!" Alina tried desperately to escape Israel, but she was too frail.

I fire the target while Isel is briefly distracted.

Arctic Blade in her general vicinity. It struck after locking on to the target via telekinesis.

Her right between the eyes pierced her skull. For a little while, Aaron sobbed.

He used a different blade to strike Kendrick than the other seven.

Mercenaries chased me down. Israel dropped to the ground, but Alina was uninjured. Along with the other hectic happenings that day, there was another incident that occurred:

The cloud that was preventing me from mating with Alina vanished.

Israel's power locked the tie all along, as it finally showed.

Can you hear me, Erick?

The obstruction is indeed gone. Israel's passing must have opened it. I told her. Israel's body contains the Arctic Blade, Alina. If anyone approaches you, strike. I'll utilise my telekinesis if necessary, but it's not as powerful as my teleportation powers.

On it!

Alina

I squatted and used both hands to remove the Arctic Blade from Israel's head.

Great difficulties. If there was one thing I discovered after entering

It was common knowledge in Erick's society that taking out swords or stakes from

Being on someone's body was a very challenging situation.

Just as the wind grew stronger, I succeeded in removing the blade from Israel's head. I was enveloped in a dark vortex as it grew stronger. When I looked up, he was in the centre of everything.

This is in this room with me, Erick!

Escape the area!

I can't! Too much wind was blowing. I had already been pressed up against the exterior of the temple.

However, as I turned to face Tuhin while still in the swirling air current,

My mind began to get an idea. At the moment, we were without any options, and only He was capable of carrying it through. Erick couldn't enter the vortex without being torn to bits, and I could not escape it. My hair was flying everywhere and occasionally even slashed my face. It was also windy.

This was strong, and it constantly threatened to knock me off balance, yet this.

It was my only opportunity. No matter what, I couldn't let this opportunity pass me by.

I could feel how little stamina I still had.

Lift me, Erick! This is our only opportunity if I can reach him! Erick heard my voice through our mating connection. Even though the vortex, I was confident he would hear me. He needed to.

He responded, "My telekinetic skills aren't that strong, Alina," but I was aware that he was not someone who would just give up.

Try! Please! I yelled once more while cradling the blade against my chest so the wind won't carry it away.

A tornado-like swirl of wind was still surrounding me. It stood up.

They launched into the air, forming a ball around Tuhin, but it was pitch-black and smelled of decay and death. Just one precise strike from me, and it would all be done. I lacked the necessary time.

I was going to ask Erick to levitate me once more when I felt my feet begin to lift off the ground.

You did it, Erick! He was picking me up and supporting my entire weight. However, the wind was too strong to keep me steady, and I was just a few inches over the ground. A second later, I roughly landed back on my feet.

Erick's telekinesis was likely being hindered by the whirlwind.

"Go forward!" I grit my teeth. The weapon was now in my possession.

I'm getting ready for the attack. Please, Erick. Give it another go! You can do this.

It!

His hesitant response was, "I'm trying.

My feet were off the earth once more. The erratic

Despite the gusts' potential to knock me off balance, I clung on with gritted teeth.

I concentrated and managed to keep my balance. I was able to be lifted one metre off the ground by Erick.

But this time, I noticed the decline more gradually. No! I was unable.

Autumn, not now. I needed to reach Tuhin. I had to put a permanent end to it. I suddenly ascended once more, this time higher and moving rather quickly. Yes! Carry on!

I focused on the air vortex at the Center, where the foul air was, knowing that Erick must be spending every last bit of energy he had.

This was protected when I held my blade above my head.

The subsequent events happened in an instant.

I was travelling quickly in the direction of the air shield. I tipped my hand back to make the sword fall and intensify its effect.

With all of my might. The sword split Tuhin in half from the top of his head to the centre of his abdomen after cutting cleanly through the shield. And lodged in his stomach. My face and body were covered with black blood. I once more had to puke due to the smell. As the winds died, the ice sword started to disappear from view as the moon shone brightly.

Within seconds and extinguishes the stink of its decay in the air. Ripped body parts

One of the vampires that had fallen began to descend to the earth. This then turns crimson.

The eyes began to flicker until nothing was left except two completely dark holes. Any hue or existence. He lost his balance.

"Nonoo!"

The yell of Aaron echoed from the walls of the old temple as there was complete silence. It is now over. The blade's task was complete. With a thunderous crash, Tuhin hit the ground with the blade still lodged in his ripped abdomen. The ground became rotting and had gone black.

His blood spilt with malice. Then he started to dry out more quickly than anything. I've experienced. His skin's meat dried up until just a skeleton was left.

The bones continued to exist before breaking into smaller bits and continuing to exist. Up till just dust was left of him.

As the blade lay on the grass, its brightness gradually faded. Through

I could see the blade getting smaller and smaller in the fading glow till the only thing left on the earth was water. That liquid spreads out.

The dead ground removes the corruption caused by Tuhin's blood and is left behind. The ground needs to be free of any decay and death. Even the vampire bodies that had previously been dispersed over the meadow now met the same demise as those of

The slain mercenaries, however, remained in their original positions on Tuhin's corpse.

I then started to stumble.

"Erick!" As the ground slammed into me, I yelled at the top of my lungs.

It's approaching. I felt myself float again just as I was about to contact the earth before being gently set on stable ground.

Why did you allow me to stumble? When Erick approached me, I questioned. He wrapped his arms around me.

I didn't help you either, Alina. It was all you. You possess the "He told me. "Either you've already finished your transformation or are extremely close to doing so. I'm not yet able to identify which.

"How is Emiel doing?" I questioned as I observed Kendrick protecting him as he severed the head of yet another vampire.

"This is bad. Erick said, "We need to get him to a healer immediately. But I had my back to him, staring at Aaron as he raised his

Erick charged at him from behind, furious.

"Be careful!" Erick was pushed aside by me as I yelled and used

I used all my strength, yet I still felt the sword pierce my chest.

My skull suddenly erupted in pain, and then nothing happened. It Lost me

After losing my balance, I fell to the ground, feeling nothing. Then there

No suffering or fear. I experienced only numbness. My senses began to malfunction one by one.

My hearing comes first, then my eyes. But when I closed my eyes, I noticed Erick take Aaron's heart out of his chest and crush it in his palm using only his bare hands.

The only thing left was darkness.

Chapter 41

Alina

What's your state of mind?

I've had enough of this blasted place and am prepared to leave.

Eventually, leave.

But that's not conceivable, you know."

It is, of course, Alina. Papa took my hands and straightened his back.

His shaky, wrinkled ones. Although he was younger than he was yet, he appeared content. I've already spent a lot of time here, darling, and it's enough. The doctors had taken every precaution. They made all effort they could.

Despite their might, they are limited to what they are already capable of. I need to live now.

I'll reflect on my past life for the rest of my days. I desire to relive it.

I want to appreciate every memory I have, but I can't if I'm still here. Time for you to

Let me leave.

Although I could understand what he was attempting to say,

Without him, I struggle to imagine my life. My entire life, I've been a daddy's girl, and

He had been a steady support system I could rely on when Mom passed away. Although the doctors had phoned us this morning with some dire news, I could never imagine letting him go. A week prior, Papa had ceased responding to medications or chemo. They persisted in their efforts but ultimately had to give up as his health began to decline. They were explicit about his report today. He possessed not much.

They wanted to release him right now because there wasn't much time left and

He's no longer required to remain here.

"Where are you headed?" With my voice suddenly trembling, I asked him.

"What is your desired next step?"

Venice sounds lovely. He grinned. "I visited there with Sheena for a

There are a few things I remember from when you were a baby.

It would be enjoyable to relive those memories for the remainder of my life, and when the

When the moment comes, lie down and sleep forever.

"I'll go with you."

"No." He gave a little head shake and smiled. You're on your own

It's your universe now, Alina. You now have a loving husband and a new family.

Who cares for you so deeply and a castle full of servants to carry out your orders?

Let this older man rest in peace and take them for yourself. Knowing this, I'll die content. I am confident that my baby girl is being well cared for by someone who values her more. Compared to anything else in this world. Will you not grant me my wish, my lovely?

daughter?"

"Okay." I nodded, holding back tears. Inquiring about Kendrick

Make preparations. Now be careful. I'll prepare the discharge paperwork.

"Alina, thank you." He released my hand. Standing on the stool, I.

I exited the room and stopped before his bed, stooping to kiss both cheeks goodbye.

Directly through the door and into Erick's waiting arms.

He put his arms around me and asked, "Are you okay?"

I sobbed a much. How am I to be? He almost swore to me that he would never.

See you soon.

"That isn't accurate." You are a part of him, and he is your father. He will never leave your heart. The fact that he is your father doesn't overshadow the fact that he is also a guy, and all men want to come across as tough and macho in front of people they care about.

I wiped my eyes with the palm of my hand and let out a chuckle. What was his secret? How did he know what to say to make me laugh at the right moment?

Better now?

Erick, I don't want him to pass away by himself. My head sat on his shoulders. She said, "I don't want him to die alone. Erick informed me while running his fingers through my hair, "He won't. Hair. I'll transport him to Venice and always keep my guys on guard. I doubt he'll be able to resist me because he's already put his daughter through so much. I'll see to it that he's never left alone. "I'm grateful," I had no words to express my gratitude. Before his lips touched mine, he said, "Anything for my dear wife." in a loving, protracted kiss.

What's your state of mind?

I was startled to see Erick waiting by the entrance as I turned around.

What time did you return?

Right now. He advanced to take a position behind me. Allen is all."

He moved into his apartment in the penthouse. He'll be surrounded by two people all the time.

One of the men I trust the most. He will be carefully cared for and is safe.

"I'm grateful," My back was against his front as we leaned.

"The physician requested that you remain in bed." You've just finished your transformation, and the sword missed your heart as it sliced through your chest. His voice reflected his anxiety and dread that he had almost lost him. Erick was present as Aaron pierced my chest with that sword.

I was completely unaware that my transition was over. I didn't either, at least not yet.

A vampire with the power to heal other vampires is known as "the royal healer."

I verified it.

I'm aware, but I don't require your blood for healing anymore, and I feel good. I suddenly discovered the last bit was true.

Yes, you've turned into a vampire. He ran his hands down the back of my body.

Causing the spine to tingle, I wasn't lying when I claimed to be in good health. I was, but I was also utterly exhausted. Erick must have acquired such information from

But he remained silent as we both gazed down at something.

Emiel is not awake.

Emiel had demonstrated his allegiance by deciding to risk his own life to defend Erick. The idea that he would not see his biological family again hurt. Nevermore. He had no pulse or motions, but he was already a vampire at birth.

I've seen Erick overcome death in a battle before. I know

Emiel was so lifeless, even though he could do the same. "Are you able to read his mind? Do you get any vibes from him? I queried Erick.

"No. He must have my blood in his veins for me to read his thoughts.

A system so that I can tell it how to establish the connection, however...

"He hasn't drawn blood from you." I finished his thought and got to

Emiel extended his hand to stroke his forehead hair. Not when he finally has a chance at a new life, "He doesn't deserve this.

"He'll pull through this,"

Kenna was standing near the door when we both turned around. She decided to wear a tiara today for whatever reason. Kenna has never worn a tiara yet.

She resembled the vampire queen, Queen Kenna, today. "Mother? What is the issue? Erick questioned her, sounding somewhat worried.

"I had to remind your father that I needed to see my son," you said. "Since I'm the queen, you shouldn't tamper with me," she said. She entered the space with a strut, her navy blue skirt draping her ankles.

However, why didn't the king permit you to see him? Does he still think it's true? Does he have to keep reciting the prophecy? I prompted her. Yes, my hubby tends to be rather obstinate at times. Kenna was seated next to Emiel on the bed. "You have to know, Alina." Erik receives his

He was persistent. It is imperative that you continually remind him.

Identify yourself.

Even though Kenna was upset with King Valory, that was wise counsel. I was surprised to receive counsel from my mother-in-law.

"Kenna!"

Once more, we all headed toward the door to look for King Valory.

Walking in. He was merely sporting a black shirt with its collar on this occasion.

A bottle of green dress pants with elbow-length sleeves. so dressed

He resembled his son, even more when dressed casually. So much so that some individuals.

He looks to them like their older brother.

The sweeping family drama starts here. In my thoughts, Erick's voice resounded.

I poked him in the ribs and then glared at him.

Ouch! Domestic abuse!

Say nothing, or I'll murder you! Why don't you try to persuade your father to

Allow Emiel to remain with your mother.

No way! I'm not interested in wading into that pool.

Such chivalry.

"Kenna! I told you not to visit this place! Emiel is returning to

According to King Valory, nothing can prevent him from going where he belongs. The

His voice carried authority, which caused the hair on my nape to rise.

"Hines, if you don't mind, may I say a word or two?" Have you followed my lead? Is anything I'm saying even logical? In any case, it didn't matter. All I needed to do was make my point.

"Speak." On his way to Kenna, he stopped and waited to hear what I had to say.

If I'm right, the alleged prophecy is predicting the Royal.

King Dominick, not a real prophet, decided to split up all twins at birth. When I inquired, Kenna and Erick's eyes immediately turned to me.

"That is correct, yes." The monarch scowled.

Then, doesn't that imply that it wasn't a true prophecy but rather an instruction he wished his heirs to carry out? Does this not imply that... as the

Do you, the current ruler, have the authority to revoke that decision? I queried.

"No way, not at all! Even though it was a command, it was mine.

King Valory said, "Our ancestor, one of the greatest kings in our history," yet I

This was not a fight I intended to lose so lightly.

You're telling me that all you're going to do is adhere to a set of unwritten rules, right?

I knew I was in a precarious situation, but whether he was a king or not, he had a suitcase full of superstitions.

Erick hasn't mentioned anything, so either he was encouraging you subtly.

Or he desired that the monarch deep fried me in a sizable pot. Though judging

I'd like to go with the former because he saved me from degenerating into an antiquated vessel.

Do you doubt my authority, little girl? On the other hand, I've lived for more than 500 years, and he was laughing in his hand. That is equivalent to five human lifetimes on average.

Yes, and you have obstinacy that dates back 500 years. If

You're afraid of something about which you can't even overcome centuries of the previous credulity.

How are you going to guide your people if it happens? I queried. "My

It was recently said to me by my mother that vampires have existed this long without being

They were discovered because they evolved and altered over time. From being only royalty and founding blood banks, you evolved into businesspeople.

Rather than continuing to feed people personally. When your civilization's inception, so much had altered. Why are you unable to swap one?

One rule that will bring a mother and son together? Emiel isn't also your son, is he? Your blood is pumping through his veins right now. We have the opportunity to show that not every twin is like Tobias and

Marcellus, I do not doubt that Erick and Emiel will resolve their issues.

Additionally, Emiel shouldn't have spared Erick's life if they were competing for the crown.

King Valory entered the room, and everyone in it held their breath.

Most likely contemplating in silence how to punish me horribly.

He went to Emiel's bedside and knelt, shocking all of us.

Beyond him, Come home, son, he urged, placing a hand on Emiel's head.

Arrive at our house. He hadn't been as dry-eyed as he had appeared because

He pretended to be unaffected by Emiel's absence to fool everyone. Possibly the

He was the leader of all vampires, but he also had a kid he had lost and was a father. Now, he

She has the chance to reintegrate him into the family formally. I wish

Then Emiel would awaken.

I informed Kenna that "he hasn't recovered consciousness yet." "We cannot,"

We relate to him because even if we are not related by blood, you are. Kenna, my mother. He can be reached without a link necessary. Kenna appeared contemplative. "Erick and I are

close, although it could be because I nurtured him. I doubt that we can share the same kind of relationship.

But you're right, Emiel. His mother is here. I'm going to try it.

Kenna put her palm on Emiel's forehead and focused by squinting. As King Valory, Erick, and I surrounded her, nothing happened for a considerable time. Kenna and Emiel both opened their eyes after nearly an hour had passed.

"Mom?" In a raspy voice, Emiel questioned whether doing that was the right move.

Kenna smiled through tear-filled eyes as King Valory sighed in relief.

"My kid, welcome back."

It's unbelievable! You completed it. Erick yelled after we

We were in our chamber, secure. "I believed Father wouldn't accept Emiel at all."

Emiel is not only permitted to remain, but you have also established provisions for him to do so.

He would get rid of the whole thing.

I embraced his neck, calling him "my lovely husband." "Any fight becomes easier when you're fighting for a worthy cause," said shoulders.

Is it right now? He pulled me toward him for a kiss while encircling my waist with his arms.

"I'm grateful,"

"What for?" I pressed my forehead against his and questioned.

"To finish off my family." Against my lips, he remarked.

It makes me whole.

"Anytime." I responded by grinning back.

I'm sorry to ruin this moment, but I must give you something.

He muttered before shoving me away.

"Okay." He looked through his jeans pockets when I frowned at him. He found what he was seeking in the end. And reached into his back pocket, pulled out a folded piece of white paper, and handed it.

I gave it to myself. "Here. Your father has written you a letter. Is it from Papa? I kept looking at the note I was holding. My palms began to sweat.

"Yes, when I transported him out, he begged me to deliver it to you."

Erick grinned and grabbed my open hand. He then seated me in our bed after guiding me there.

Down. "While I go an errand for Father, why don't you read it in peace?"

"You're leaving?" He went toward the door, and I gazed up at him.

I'll return in a few hours. Take your time," he said.

Papa quickly sped out the door, leaving me alone myself with Papa's letter.

I spent some time debating what to put on the sheet of paper.

After around 30 minutes, my tolerance finally gave way to curiosity. I opened the mail because I was overcome by it. My eyes sting with tears as soon as I

I recognised Papa's signature cursive writing.

Honestly, Alina

Since your birth, I know I haven't been much of a father to you.

I apologise in advance for the loss of your mother. You've always been so resilient. That's the point. You supported me even though you were in pain. And I'm

I'm so proud to have such a wonderful daughter.

When you were in front of me, I was unable to tell you all of this because

I was determined to maintain my strength and did not want to let it slip. You've Child, you've advanced in life so far that if I remained with you, I'd only be able to

You'll suffocate under it. Prospects are excellent for you. The princess is you. of all vampires right now, and you'll rule over them one day. I am aware of that. You'll make everyone proud when that time comes. The best thing is you. I could not request anything more than your happiness, as it is the most beneficial thought to cross my mind in my entire life. I chose Erick for you because I knew that one day he would be the best thing that ever happened to you. He loves it

Even though he doesn't always show it, you know. No one else exists that I would have trusted with your care.

I believe that I only survived that accident and my condition because

This is taking so long because I wanted to help you one final time, but I've already.

That's already been accomplished. Alina, I've served my purpose in your life. You are mine forever.

No matter where I am, I'll always keep an eye on you, my little princess. However, the moment has come for you to advance and improve the world. I am aware that will happen.

In any case, my daughter will be able to accomplish that goal.

Sincerely,

's father,

